Relative CAT activity

Molar ratio (pSV2Neo/hMT-IIA-CAT)

(57) Abrégé/Abstract:
Cellular microcompetition for the transcription factor human GA binding protein (GABP) is a risk factor associated with obesity and obesity-related diseases such as osteoarthritis, atherosclerosis, obstructive sleep apnea, various cancers, and periodontitis. The invention uses this novel discovery to develop assays which determine the level of microcompetition in a cell. Other assays developed from the knowledge that microcompetition is occurring in cells are also disclosed. This novel discovery led to the development of assays which can determine the level of microcompetition in a cell and to select compounds to target this microcompetition syndrome. In addition, methods to treat a patient for microcompetition based disease are taught.
Abstract: Cellular microcompetition for the transcription factor human GA binding protein (GABP) is a risk factor associated with obesity and obesity-related diseases such as osteoarthritis, atherosclerosis, obstructive sleep apnea, various cancers, and periodontitis. The invention uses this novel discovery to develop assays which determine the level of microcompetition in a cell. Other assays developed from the knowledge that microcompetition is occurring in cells are also disclosed. This novel discovery led to the development of assays which can determine the level of microcompetition in a cell and to select compounds to target this microcompetition syndrome. In addition, methods to treat a patient for microcompetition based disease are taught.
MICROCOMPETITION AND HUMAN DISEASE

BACKGROUND OF THE INVENTION

FIELD OF THE INVENTION

The invention pertains to the field of human diseases. More particularly, the invention pertains to how microcompetition for transcription factors contributes to obesity, cancer, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis, hypertension and diabetes.

DESCRIPTION OF RELATED ART

The cause of many cases of obesity, cancer, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis, and diabetes is unknown. Therefore, treatment is focused on symptomolgy and effects of the diseases and has limited effectiveness. In many cases, known treatments are associated with serious negative side effects.

Recently, the National Cancer Institute (NIH Guide 2000) announced a program aimed to “reorganize the ‘front-end’ or gateway to drug discovery.” The new approach promotes a three stage discovery process. The first stage is discovery of the molecular mechanisms that underlie neoplastic transformations, cancer growth and metastasis. Next stage is selection of a novel molecular target within the discovered biochemical pathway known to have a unique difference between a healthy and a cancerous cell. The final stage is design of new drugs that modify the selected target. The program encourages moving away from screening agents by their clinical effects, such as shrinking tumor cells, *in vivo* or *in vitro*, to screening agents or designing drugs by their effects on a specific molecular mechanism. According to the NCI, screening by clinical effects identified drugs that demonstrated clear limitations in clinical efficacy, while screening by desired molecular effects should produce more efficacious and specific drugs.

The best drugs are those that are specifically designed to reverse the molecular events that cause disease. However, it is critical that the molecular mechanisms that underlie obesity, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis, hypertension and diabetes be understood before drugs can be effectively designed to treat the disease.
SUMMARY OF THE INVENTION

For the first time, this invention teaches the novel concept of microcompetition for GABP. There is a limited amount of GABP•p300 transcription complex available in the cell. The present invention teaches that cellular microcompetition for the transcription factor human GA binding protein (GABP) results in diseases such as include cancer, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis and obesity. Moreover, other disruptions of the GABP pathway from microcompetition, diets, mutations, toxins, or drugs have a similar effect to microcompetition. This new understanding of the biochemical pathway surrounding GABP can be used to identify or design drugs to treat these diseases.

The invention includes methods of treating adverse affects associated with disruptions of the GABP pathway by microcompetition, diets, mutations, toxins, or drugs. Specifically, administering to a patient an effective amount of an agent that overcomes the disruption of the GABP pathway. The diseases that can be treated include cancer, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis and obesity. The specific treatments can be accomplished in a variety of ways.

To most directly remove microcompetition, an agent that decreases foreign DNA N-boxes in cells can be used to eliminate the competitive binding sites. Examples of such agents are: Ganciclovir, ddI, ddC, and garlic and others described in the description. The present invention includes a method of identifying other compounds to treat the effects of microcompetition by assaying for compounds that eliminate competitive binding sites.

Other treatments of the effects of microcompetition or other disruptions of the GABP pathway are agents that stimulate phosphorylation of a GABP kinase, increases concentration of a GABP kinase, and increases affinity between GABP and GABP kinase. Examples of such agents are: dietary fiber (via sodium butyrate), sodium butyrate, acarbose, vanadate, vectors to knockout PTP1B, and others described in the description. The present invention includes a method of identifying other compounds to treat disruptions of the GABP pathway by assaying for compounds that have and affect on a GABP kinase.
Another treatment option is to use an agent that decreases the oxidative effect on GABP. Examples of such agents are: garlic and other anti-oxidants described in the description. The present invention includes a method of identifying other compounds to treat disruptions of the GABP pathway by assaying for compounds that decrease oxidative effect on GABP.

Agents that increase the concentration or effectiveness of a GABP stimulator can also be used to more effectively utilize GABP. In the converse, agents that decrease the concentration or effectiveness of a GABP suppressor can also be administered. In addition, treatment can employ an agent that increases concentration of GABPα, increases concentration of GABPβ, decreases concentration of GABPγ, increases phosphorylation of GABP, increases affinity between GABP and p300/CBP, or increases concentration of p300/CBP. Such agents would largely overlap with the agents above. However, they produce more specific effects. The present invention includes a method of identifying other compounds to treat disruptions of the GABP pathway by assaying for compounds that have these specific effects.

BRIEF DESCRIPTION OF THE DRAWINGS

Figure 1 shows the relation between molar ratio of pSV2Neo/hMT-IIA-CAT and relative CAT activity.

Figure 2 shows the relation between molar ratio of bgal/CAT and relative CAT activity.

Figure 3 shows the amount of COL1A2 RNA measured in cells grown at temperature permissive (T) or nonpermissive (N) for transformation.

Figure 4 shows the effect of infection with HIV-1, heat inactivated HIV-1 and mock-infection on CD18 expression over time.

Figure 5 shows a schematic illustration of the extracellular signaling cascade and its effect on GABP.
Figure 6 shows a schematic illustration of the activation of MAPK by MEK-1, and deactivation of MAPK by either PP2A, PTP1B, or MKP-1.

Figure 7 shows a schematic illustration of the relationship between ERK signaling and microcompetition for available GABP.

Figure 8 shows a schematic illustration of how phosphorylated GABP stimulates the transcription of the sensitized receptor and how the new receptors increase the sensitivity of the pathway to changes in concentration of GABP kinase agent.

Figure 9 shows a schematic illustration of feedback inhibition involving GABP.

Figure 10 shows a schematic illustration of the effect of a downstream control relative to a sensitized receptor.

Figure 11 shows the effect of HSV-1 and LPS exposure on TF procoagulant activity (PCA) of human umbilical vein endothelial cells.

Figure 12 shows a schematic illustration of the effects of LPS, RSVL and RA on NF-κB and ETS sites of the TF gene.

Figure 13 shows a schematic illustration of the P450 mediated oxidation of arachidonic acid.

Figure 14 shows the relation between MAPK activity and arachidonic acid metabolites.

Figure 15 shows the number of viable cells following transfection with pBARB and the “empty vector” pSV-neo.

Figure 16 shows accumulation of triglyceride, assayed by oil red staining in untreated F442A cells, or following transfection with the WT, and the “empty vector” pZIPNeo.

Figure 17 shows the percent reverse transmigration of peripheral blood mononuclear cells as a function of time.
Figure 18 shows the effect of LPS or Cu+2 exposure on TF mRNA levels.

Figure 19 shows the GSH content in human promyelocytic leukemia cells U937 following treatment with 7-ketocholesterol.

Figure 20 is a photomicrograph of atheroma (type IV lesion) in proximal left anterior descending coronary artery from a 23-year old man who died of a homicide.

Figure 21 is a photomicrograph of thick part of atheroma (type IV lesion) in proximal left anterior descending coronary artery from a 19-year-old man who committed suicide.

Figure 22 shows TF activity over time following treatment with herpes simplex virus-1 (HSV-1), LPS or platelet-derived growth factor (PDGF).

Figure 23 shows a graphic illustration of the change in TF activity over time for a control cell and a cell harboring a GABP viral genome.

Figure 24 shows a graphic illustration of the microcompetition effect on the relation between catecholamines and lipolysis.

Figure 25-28 shows the measure effects norepinephrine, isoprenaline, forskolin, and dibutyryl cyclic AMP on glycerol release in adipocytes from subjects with a family trait of obesity and controls.

Figure 29 shows the measured relationship between epinephrine infusion and glycerol release in obesity versus lean.

Figure 30-31 shows the measured percent change and total glycerol release as a function of plasma epinephrine concentration in obese and lean women.

Figure 32 shows the percent Rb-null preadipocytes in S phase following five different treatments.

Figure 33 shows a graphic illustration of how microcompetition reduces Rb transcription.
Figure 34 shows some of the molecules on the surface of DC and T cells participating in their binding.

Figure 35 shows a graphic illustration of how an increase in either [B7] or [Ag], increases the probability of Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation.

Figure 36 shows a graphic illustration of the relation between time and TF expression for cells migrating through regions of low, moderate, and high antigen concentrations.

Figure 37 shows a graphic illustration of the relation between trigger apoptosis, T-cell induced apoptosis and tissue cell damage.

Figure 38 shows a graphic illustration of the two peak dynamics.

Figure 39 shows a graphic illustration of the effect of an excessively slow DC on the two peaks.

Figure 40 shows the percent change in □ cell apoptosis and percent of islet area following five low-dose streptozotocin injections.

Figure 41 shows the effect on □ cell apoptosis of a single injection of cyclophosphamide to 3 and 12 week old NOD mice and an injection of nicotinamide and cyclophosphamide to 12 week old mice.

Figure 42 shows a graphic illustration of the effect of thioredoxin (TRX) overexpression on the two peaks.

Figure 43 shows a graphic illustration of the effect of DC maturation on the number of cells expressing certain concentrations of tissue factor, antigens and costimulation on their surface.

Figure 44 shows a graphic illustration of the Barratt-Boyes 2000 experimental configuration.

Figure 45 shows the effect of treatment on the microcompetition equilibrium.
Figure 46 shows a schematic illustration of how aberrant GABP expression can be restored.

Figure 47 shows the effect of sodium butyrate treatment on MT mRNA.

Figure 48 shows the effect of acarbose treatment on change in body weight over time.

Figure 49 shows the effect of vanadate treatment on PFK-2 mRNA over time.

Figure 50 shows the change in HIV-1 DNA and RNA load relative to baseline in 42 antiretroviral naive HIV-1 infected persons treated with either AZT monotherapy, a combination of AZT + ddc or a combination of AZT + ddI over a period of 80 weeks.

Figure 51 graphically shows the result of a regression analysis with viral DNA level as dependent variable and number of years since seroconversion as independent variable.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF THE INVENTION

The present invention starts from the discovery that microcompetition is involved in a variety of human diseases. It is only by looking through the lens of the present invention that a discernable pattern of disease progression and symptomology is understood. From this understanding the inventor was able to develop new assays, screening regiments and treatments.

Once microcompetition was discovered to play a role in human disease, the present inventor looked back at previous work to see if it was possible to find published observations consistent with microcompetition. Having made the original discovery, the inventor has been able to piece together and relate a mosaic of individual studies and information that heretofore seemed entirely unrelated.

The present invention started as a new theory of human disease and testing the hypothesis was also performed in a novel way. Once the theory was developed, a novel mechanism of action and relationship between biochemical agents was proposed, followed by a set of predictions of the effect of modification of one or more of those biochemical
agents. However, it was unnecessary to perform thousands of experiments to test the hypothesis, because others had studied the biochemical agents and recorded the effects of modifying those agents. By looking at the results of thousands of studies on dozens of biochemical agents, the set of predicitions was tested and supported. Close to 600 papers are referenced in this disclosure, each providing a piece of information that forms the totality of this invention.

Much of this disclosure is similar to a mosaic. In the same way, ceramic plates or colored glass are shattered and rearranged by the mosaic artist to form a new piece of art, the applicant has similarly used pieces of information evidence gleened from work of other researchers to understand the mechanism of human disease in an entirely new way.

The present invention teaches the relationship between microcompetition and human disease and this detailed description starts with a detailed explanation of microcompetition. It then progresses through the affected pathways and teaches the pieced together evidence supporting the microcompetition model. Based upon this model, a series of new assays, screening regiments and treatments are described. The full citation for each reference is provided at the end of the detailed disclosure and is cited in an abbreviated fashion within the text to make the disclosure more readable.

1. Discovery 1: Microcompetition

1. Definition

The situation where DNA sequences compete for the same transcription complex will be called microcompetition. If we assume first that the cellular availability of at least one of the proteins constructing the transcription complex is limited, second that the complex binds DNA of two genes and third that binding stimulates the transcription of one of these genes, then microcompetition for the transcription complex reduces binding of the complex to the gene, resulting in reduced transcription.

2. Molecular effect

The following studies demonstrate the effect of microcompetition on the expression of various cellular genes.
a)  **Human metallothionein-II\textsubscript{A} (hMT-II\textsubscript{A})**

CV-1 cells were cotransfected with a constant amount of plasmid containing the hMT-II\textsubscript{A} promoter (-286 nt relative to the start of transcription to +75 nt) fused to the bacterial gene coding chloramphenicol acetyltransferase (hMT-II\textsubscript{A}-CAT) and increasing amounts of plasmid containing the viral SV40 early promoter and enhancer fused to the bacterial gene coding for aminoglycoside resistance (pSV2Neo). Figure 1 illustrates the results of microcompetition between the two plasmids in terms of the relative CAT activity (relative CAT activity = CAT activity in the presence of pSV2Neo/CAT activity in the absence of pSV2Neo).

A 2.4-fold molar excess of the plasmid containing the viral enhancer reduced 90% of CAT activity. No microcompetition was observed with the viral plasmid after deletion of the SV40 enhancer.

The efficient inhibition of hMT-II\textsubscript{A} promoter activity by the SV40 enhancer suggests that the enhancer has a high affinity for a limiting transcription complex that also binds the hMT-II\textsubscript{A} promoter. Moreover, although both the hMT-II\textsubscript{A} promoter and the SV40 enhancer bind the Sp1 transcription factor, further studies ruled out the idea that the two plasmids compete for Sp1 or factors which bind the TATA box (Scholer 1986\textsuperscript{1}).

b)  **Platelet derived growth factor-B (PDGF-B)**

JEG-3 choriocarcinoma cells were transiently cotransfected with a constant amount of PDGF-B promoter/enhancer-driven CAT reporter gene (PDGF-B-CAT) and increasing amounts of a plasmid containing either the human cytomegalovirus promoter/enhancer fused to the \(\beta\)-galactosidase (\(\beta\)gal) reporter gene (CMV-\(\beta\)gal) or the viral SV40 early promoter and enhancer elements fused to \(\beta\)gal (SV40-\(\beta\)gal).

Figure 2 presents the results of microcompetition between these plasmids in terms of relative CAT activity.

Both CMV-\(\beta\)gal and SV40-\(\beta\)gal repressed the activity of PDGF-B-CAT in a concentration-dependent manner. Mutational studies of the SV40 promoter/enhancer element showed that the sequence in SV40-\(\beta\)gal which competes with PDGF-B is located
within the SV40 enhancer region (Adam 1996). However, neither a specific DNA box nor responsible transcription factors were identified.

c) **Collagen type I α2 chain (COL1A2)**

Skin fibroblasts were infected with temperature sensitive Rous Sarcoma Virus (ts-RSV). The amount of COL1A2 RNA was measured in cells grown at temperatures permissive (T) or nonpermissive (N) for transformation. Figure 3 presents the effect of microcompetition between the virus and the cellular gene on the concentration of RNA encoded by that gene.

In skin fibroblasts the amount of COL1A2 RNA was decreased 5-fold. A similar experiment showed a reduction of 3.3-fold in the amount of COL1A1 RNA (Allebach 1985).

WI-38 human lung fibroblasts were transformed by a clone of SV40. The mRNA of the α2(I) chain was absent in the SV40 transformed WI-38 fibroblasts, whereas the mRNA of the α1(I) chain was detected on the same blot. The study eliminated a few possible reasons for the reduced expression of the α2(I) chain in the infected cells. The chromosomes which normally carry the α2(I) and α1(I) genes appeared to be perfectly normal. Restriction mapping of the α2(I) gene in the transformed cells did not show any gross insertion of the viral genome within the gene or its promoter. Methylation analysis of the promoter and 3' regions of the gene did not reveal any detectable hypermethylation (Parker 1989).

Normal cells synthesize the standard form of collagen type I consisting of two α1(I) chains and one α2(I) chain. Tumors caused by the polyomavirus, on the other hand, mainly synthesize a α1(I) trimer (Moro 1977). A high concentration of trimer was also found in SV40 transformed WI-38 human lung fibroblasts (Parker 1992). Microcompetition mainly decreases the expression of the α2(I) chain (see Allebach 1985 and Parker 1989 above). Consequently, the relative shortage of the α2(I) chain in infected cells stimulates formation of the α1(I) trimers.
d) **Integrin (β₂ leukocyte, CD18)**

Human monocytes were infected with human immunodeficiency virus type 1 (HIV-1). The surface expression of CD18, CD11a, CD11b, CD11c, CD58, CD62L, CD54, and CD44 was measured in HIV-1 infected cells and mock-infected cells. The extent and kinetics of CD11a, CD11b, CD11c CD58 and CD62L expression were similar in HIV-1 infected cells and mock-infected cells. CD18, CD54 and CD44 showed a significant decrease in expression in the HIV-1 infected cells. When monocytes were treated with a heat-inactivated HIV-1 virus, the expression of CD54 and CD44 was similar to the expression in mock-infected cells, however, the expression of CD18 was reduced. Consider the results in figure 4.

According to Le Naour, *et al.*, (1997) "treatment with heat-inactivated virus shown that regulation of CD18 expression is dependent on early HIV-related regulatory mechanisms whereas regulation of CD44 and CD54 requires viral events taking place after retrotranscription of viral RNA."

Adult T-cell leukemia (ATL) is etiologically associated with the human T-cell leukemia virus type 1 (HTLV-1). The mRNA of CD18 was measured in three human T-cell acute-lymphoblastic-leukemia cell lines, MOLT-4, Jurkat and CEM negative for HTLV-1, four T-cell lines, MT-2, TCL-Kan, C91/PL and C8166, which were established by transformation with HTLV-1, one T-cell line, TOM-1, derived from an HTLV-1 carrier and positive for HTLV-1, and four cell lines, MT-1, TL-Om1, H582 and HuT102, which are ATL derived T-cell lines positive for HTLV-1. Overall, non ATL derived, HTLV-1 negative cell lines showed high levels of CD18 mRNA. The non ATL derived, HTLV-1 positive cell lines showed moderate levels of CD18 mRNA. The ATL derived, HTLV-1 positive cell lines showed low levels of CD18 mRNA (Ibid, Fig. 7, Tanaka 1995).

Southern-blotting analysis did not reveal any gross structural changes in the CD18 gene. To test CD18 promoter activity in the ATL derived, HTLV-1 positive cell lines, TL-Om1, H582 and HuT102 were transfected with a CD18 promoter-driven CAT reporter gene. The same construct was transfected into the non ATL derived, HTLV-1 negative Jurkat cells. The results showed high CAT expression in the Jurkat cells and low CAT expression in the 3 ATL derived, HTLV-1 positive cell lines. Tanaka, *et al.*, (1995)
conclude that "the down regulation of the CD18 gene in these ATL cell lines was due to lack of transcription factor(s) necessary for CD18 gene expression." The paper does not identify the transcription factor, neither does it provide an explanation for the reduced availability of the unknown factor(s).

The Epstein-Barr virus (EBV) selectively infects human B cells causing infectious mononucleosis (IM). Lymphoblastoid cell lines (LCLs) were derived from EBV-infected B cells obtained from normal individuals, IM patients, or by in vitro EBV transformation of normal B cells. LCLs grow as large cell clusters. In contrast, Burkitt lymphoma (BL) cells grow mostly as single cells or loose clusters. The CD18 surface expression was measured in 10 LCLs and 10 BL cell lines. Approximately one-third of the cell population in each LCL was CD18-negative. In comparison, the majority of the malignant cells in each BL cell were CD-18 negative (Patarroyo 1988).

In all these studies, competition between viral and cellular DNA for limiting regulatory factors reduces transcription of the CD18 gene.

3. **GABP transcription factor**

   a) **N-box and GABP**

   The DNA motif (A/C)GGA(A/T)(G/A) (N-box) is the core binding sequence of the transcription factor known as Growth Associated (GA) Binding Protein (GABP), Nuclear Respiratory Factor 2 (NRF-2)\(^{10}\), E4 Transcription factor 1 (E4TF1)\(^{11}\) and Enhancer Factor 1A (EF-1A)\(^{12}\). In this report, for simplicity, we refer to the transcription factor as GABP and to the motif as the N-box.

   b) **Cellular GABP genes**

   GABP binds promoters and enhancers of many cellular genes, for instance, \(\beta_2\) leukocyte integrin (CD18) (nt -48 to nt -43, or -48/-43) (Rosmarin 1998\(^{13}\)), interleukin 16 (IL-16) (-39/-34, -22/-17, +14/+19) (Bannert 1999\(^{14}\)), interleukin 2 (IL-2) (-438/-434) (Avots 1997\(^{15}\)), interleukin 2 receptor \(\beta\)-chain (IL-2\(\beta\)) (-56/-34) (Lin 1993\(^{16}\)), IL-2 receptor \(\gamma\)-chain (\(\gamma_c\)) (two sites in-69/-49) (Markiewicz 1996\(^{17}\)), human secretory interleukin-1 receptor antagonist (secretory IL-1ra) (-93/-79) (Smith 1998\(^{18}\)).
retinoblastoma (RB) (-200/-192) (Sowa 1997\textsuperscript{19}), human thrombopoietin (TPO) (-69/-63) (Kamura 1997\textsuperscript{20}), aldose reductase (two sites in -186/-146) (Wang 1993\textsuperscript{21}), neutrophil elastase (NE) (Nuchprayoon 1999\textsuperscript{22}, Nuchprayoon 1997\textsuperscript{23}), folate binding protein (FBP) (two sites in -220/-194) (Sadasivan 1994\textsuperscript{24}), cytochrome c oxidase subunit Vb (COXVb) (two sites in +16/+26) (Basu 1993\textsuperscript{25}, Sucharow 1995\textsuperscript{26}), cytochrome c oxidase subunit IV (COXIV) (two sites immediately downstream of the major loci of transcriptional initiation) (Carter 1994\textsuperscript{27}, Carter 1992\textsuperscript{28}), mitochondrial transcription factor A (mtTFA) (Virbasius 1994\textsuperscript{29}), β subunit of the FoF1 ATP synthase (ATPsynβ) (-302/-298) (Villena 1998\textsuperscript{30}), prolactin (prl) (-101/-92) (Ouyang 1996\textsuperscript{31}), oxytocin receptor (OTR) (-85/-65) (Hoare 1999\textsuperscript{32}).

In some of these gene GABP binds to the promoter - a site proximal to the transcription initiation site. See, for instance, CD18, COXVb, COXIV. In other genes, GABP binds an enhancer - a site distal to the transcription initiation site. See, for instance, IL-2 and ATPsynβ (see more on these genes below).

c) \textit{GABPα, β and γ (GABP as activator, repressor)}

Five subunits of GABP are known. GABPα, GABPβ1, GABPβ2 (together called GABPβ), GABPγ1 and GABPγ2 (together called GABPγ). None of the GABP subunits can stimulate transcription alone, either \textit{in vivo} or \textit{in vitro}. GABPα is an ets-related DNA-binding protein. GABPα binds the N-box.

GABPα forms a heterocomplex with GABPβ. GABPβ has an amino acid sequence in the amino-terminal which includes a four tandem repeat which is responsible for heterodimerization. GABPβ also contains a leucine zipper-like motif in the carboxyl terminal which allows it to homodimerize. Through hetrodimerization and homodimerization domains, GABPα and GABPβ form a αβ2 heterotetrameric complex which stimulates transcription efficiently \textit{in vitro} and \textit{in vivo}.

GABPα also forms a heterocomplex with GABPγ. An identical four tandem repeat in GABPγ is responsible for heterodimerization between GABPα and GABPγ.
However, GABPγ is lacking the leucine zipper-like motif and, therefore, does not homodimerize. The heterodimer does not stimulate transcriptional transactivation.

The degree of transactivation by GABP appears to be a result of the relative intracellular concentrations of GABPβ and GABPγ (Suzuki 199833). An increase in GABPβ relative to GABPγ increases transcription, while an increase of GABPγ relative to GABPβ represses transcription. A log regression on the results of Suzuki, et al. produced the following formula for the fold increase in transcription as a function of relative concentrations of GABPβ and GABPγ (brackets indicate concentration).

\[ \text{Fold increase in transcription} = 2.785 \times (\frac{[GABP\beta]}{[GABP\gamma]})^{0.06} \]

The degree of transactivation by GABP is a function of the ratio between GABPβ and GABPγ. By controlling this ratio the cell regulates transcription of genes with binding sites for GABP (Suzuki 1998).

d) **GABP binds p300**

GABP binds the p300 acetyltransferase, a member of the p300/CBP family of proteins. GABPα binds directly to the C-terminal of p300 and much more weakly to the N-terminal. GABPβ does not bind directly to p300 (Bannert 199934).

e) **Cellular availability of p300 is limited**

Although p300/CBP is widely expressed, its cellular availability is limited. A few studies demonstrated that competitive binding of cellular proteins to p300/CBP had an inhibitory effect on activation by certain transcription factors. Competitive binding of p300 or CBP to the glucocorticoid receptor (GR) or retinoic acid receptor (RAR) inhibited activation of a promoter dependent on the AP-1 transcription factor (Kamei 199635). Competitive binding of CBP to STAT1α inhibited activation of a promoter dependent on both the AP-1 and ets transcription factors (Horvai 199736). Competitive binding of p300 to STAT2 inhibited activation of a promoter dependent on the NF-κB RelA transcription factor (Hottiger 199837).
f) Viral GABP enhancers

The (A/C)GG(A/T)(G/A) motif is the core binding sequence of many viral enhancers. Examples include the Polyomavirus Enhancer Area 3 (PEA3) (5108/5113, and 5202/5207) (Asano 1990\textsuperscript{38}), E1A enhancer (-300/-295, -200/-195) (Higashino 1993\textsuperscript{39}), (GABP binds to the promoter of the adenovirus early-region 4, or E4, hence the name E4TF1), Rous Sarcoma Virus (RSV) enhancer (189/194) (Laimins 1984\textsuperscript{40}), Herpes Simplex Virus 1 (HSV-1) (in the promoter of the immediate early gene ICP4) (LaMarco 1989\textsuperscript{41}), (Douville 1995\textsuperscript{42}), Cytomegalovirus (CMV) (IE-1 enhancer/promoter region) (Boshart 1985\textsuperscript{43}), Moloney Murine Leukemia Virus (Mo-MuLV) enhancer (8024/8048) (Gunther 1994\textsuperscript{44}), Human Immunodeficiency Virus (HIV) (the two NF-κB binding motifs in the HIV LTR) (Flory 1996\textsuperscript{45}), Epstein-Barr virus (EBV) (20 copies in the +7421/+8042 oriP/enhancer) (Rawlins 1985\textsuperscript{46}) and Human T-cell lymphotropic virus (HTLV) (8 sites in the enhancer (Mauclere 1995\textsuperscript{47}) and one site in the LTR (Kornfeld 1987\textsuperscript{48})). Moreover, some viral enhancers, for example SV40, lack a precise N-box, but still bind the GABP transcription factor (Bannert 1999\textsuperscript{49}).

Some papers present evidence supporting the binding of GABP to the N-boxes of these viral enhancers. Flory, \textit{et al.}, 1996\textsuperscript{50} show binding of GABP to the HIV LTR, Douville, \textit{et al.}, 1995\textsuperscript{51} show binding of GABP to the promoter of ICP4 of HSV-1. Bruder, \textit{et al.}, 1991\textsuperscript{52} and Bruder, \textit{et al.}, 1989\textsuperscript{53} show binding of GABP to the adenovirus E1A enhancer element I. Ostapchuk, \textit{et al.}, 1986\textsuperscript{54} show binding of GABP (called EF-1A in this paper) to the polyomavirus enhancer. Gunther, \textit{et al.}, 1994\textsuperscript{55} show binding of GABP to Mo-MuLV.

Other papers show competition between these viral enhancers and enhancers of other viruses. Scholer and Gruss, 1984\textsuperscript{56} show competition between the Moloney Sarcoma Virus (MSV) enhancer and SV40 enhancer and also competition between the RSV enhancer and the BK virus enhancer.
4. **Microcompetition for GABP•p300**

GABPα binds p300 (Bannert 1999\(^5\)). Therefore, microcompetition for GABP is also microcompetition for GABP•p300. Since cellular availability of p300 is limited, cellular availability of GABP•p300 is also limited.

A virus which binds the GABP complex will be called a GABP virus. Microcompetition for GABP•p300 between a GABP virus and a cellular GABP gene reduces cellular availability of the GABP•p300 complex to the cellular gene. Under these conditions, if the cellular gene is stimulated by the complex, the cellular gene shows reduced transcription. If the cellular gene is repressed by the complex, the cellular gene shows increased transcription.

II. **Discovery 2: GABP•p300 binding regulation**

1. **ERK pathway**

Extracellular signals are transmitted to the nucleus in many ways. Often signal transduction occurs through activation of a kinase found in the cytoplasm. Once activated, the kinase translocates to the nucleus where it phosphorylates target transcription factors thereby modifying their capacity to regulate gene expression. For MAP kinase cascades, the signal is propagated through sequential activation of multiple kinases. These kinases amplify small input signals into large changes in output. All MAP kinases are activated by dual phosphorylation on a Thr-Xaa-Tyr motif, after which they function as proline-directed Ser/Thr kinases with minimal target sequence of Ser/Thr-Pro (Hipskind, 1998\(^5\)).

Growth factors and other extracellular agents that support proliferation activate the ERK (Extracellular signal-regulated kinase, previously called the MAP kinase) signaling cascade, see figure 5.

The kinases which make up the core of this cascade are Raf, which phosphorylates MEK, which in turn phosphorylates ERK. Raf (MAPKKK) is activated by an unclear mechanism usually dependent upon Ras. By interacting with Ras, Raf is relocalized to the membrane, which appears to be an important step for its activation. The Raf family has three known members, c-Raf (or Raf-1), B-Raf and A-Raf, and each of these proteins can
function as a MAPKKK depending upon cell type. c-Raf has been generally described as the major activator. Other kinases can also function in this capacity (i.e., MEKKs 1 and 3) and the possibility remains open for other specific activators of the ERK cascade.

Raf activates the MAPKK MEK (MEK1 and MEK2), a kinase that phosphorylates both Thr and Tyr residues in the activation motif in ERK. There are five members of the ERK family identified to date, p44ERK1, p42ERK2, ERK3, ERK4, and ERK5/BMK1 (for Big MAP Kinase). Activation results in translocation of ERK to the nucleus, where it targets transcription factors and the basal transcription complex.

Dephosphorylation at either Thy or Tyr residue inactivates ERK. There are three classes of ERK inactivators: Type 1/2 serine/threonine phosphatases, such as PP2A, tyrosine-specific phosphatases (also called protein-tyrosine phosphatase, denoted PTP), such as PTP1B, and dual specificity phosphatases, such as MKP-1. For recent reviews of the role of these classes of phosphatases in the regulation MAP kinase activity, see Camps 2000\(^59\), Saxena 2000\(^60\) and Keyse 1998\(^61\). Herein the term “ERK phosphatase” denotes any phosphatase which inactivates ERK. The class of all ERK phosphatases is a super class of the above three classes of ERK inactivators.

Figure 6 illustrates the activation of MAPK by MEK-1, a MAPKK, and deactivation of MAPK by either PP2A, a serine/threonine phosphatase, PTP1B, a tyrosine-specific phosphatase, or MKP-1, a dual specificity phosphatase. A diamond represents a kinase, an ellipse, a phosphatase, an arrow, phosphorylation, and a T-headed line, dephosphorylation.

For a discussion of the JNK/SAPK pathway see below.

2. **ERK agents**

A molecule which stimulates the phosphorylation of ERK will be called an “ERK agent.” Some ERK agents include sodium butyrate (SB), trichostatin A (TSA), trapoxin, phorbol ester (phorbol 12-myristate 13-acetate, PMA, TPA), retinoic acid (RA, vitamin A), zinc and copper, interferon-\(\gamma\) (IFN\(\gamma\)), new differentiation factor (NDF or heregulin), estron, etradiol (E2), interleukin 1\(\beta\) (IL-1\(\beta\)), interleukin 6 (IL-6), tumor necrosis factor \(\alpha\)
(TNFα), transforming growth factor β (TGFβ) and oxytocin (OT). Consider the following evidence.

\[ \text{(TGFβ)} \]

\( a) \quad \text{Sodium butyrate (SB), trichostatin A (TSA) and trapoxin} \)

The ERK agents sodium butyrate (SB), trichostatin A (TSA) and trapoxin were tested for their effects on the major promoter (M) of human choline acetyltransferase (ChAT). The human choline acetyltransferase gene was activated by sodium butyrate, trichostatin A, and trapoxin A in transient and stable transfection studies (Espinosa 1999\(^6\)). These agents also stimulated ERK1 and ERK2 phosphorylation. If the MAP kinase cascade is blocked with the MAP kinase kinase (MEK) inhibitor PD98059 or by overexpression of dominant-negative mutants of Ras and ERK2, activation of ChAT promoter by sodium butyrate is suppressed (Espinosa 1999).

Transcriptional activation of cellular and transfected genes by histone deacetylase (HDAC) inhibitors is blocked by H7, an inhibitor of serine/threonine protein kinases. In transient transfections with the human ChAT gene, cells were treated for 1 hour with H7, and then sodium butyrate or trapoxin were added in the continued presence of H7. Under these conditions, H7 inhibited the activation by both trapoxin and sodium butyrate (Espinosa 1999). Similar experiments were performed using the RSV LTR and the SV40 enhancer. Activation of these enhancer regions by sodium butyrate or trapoxin was suppressed by H7. In addition, activation of the RSV LTR by sodium butyrate was blocked by the MEK inhibitor PD98059 while activation of the SV40 promoter was similarly depressed about three-fold (Espinosa 1999).

Transcription of the nicotinic acetylcholine receptor (AChR) in adult muscle is restricted to the nuclei located at the neuromuscular junction. The N-box, a promoter element, contributes to this specialized synaptic expression of the AChR δ- and ε-subunits. GABP binds to the N-box \textit{in vitro}. GABP subunits contain phosphorylation sites which serve as targets for MAP kinases and these kinases also mediate the heregulin-elicited stimulation of transcription of AChR genes in cultured chick myotubes. Phosphorylation studies in chick primary myotubes showed that heregulin stimulated GABPα and GABPβ phosphorylation. Both subunits of GABP are phosphorylated \textit{in vivo} by MAP kinases and heregulin enhances their phosphorylation (Schaeffer 1998\(^{63} \)).
b) **Phorbol ester (phorbol 12-myristate 13-acetate, PMA, TPA), thapsigargin**

The murine macrophage cell line RAW 264.7 was stimulated with thapsigargin, an endomembrane Ca(2+)-ATPase inhibitor, and TPA, the protein kinase C activator. Both thapsigargin (30 nM) and TPA (30 nM) induced phosphorylation of p44/p42 MAP kinase and production of histamine in a time- and concentration-dependent manner. The specific MEK1 inhibitor PD98059 strongly suppressed both the thapsigargin and TPA induced histamine production. Another MEK1 inhibitor, U-0126, also inhibited both the thapsigargin and TPA-induced histamine production in a concentration-dependent manner (Shiraishi 2000).

TPA induces *in vitro* differentiation of the pluripotent K562 human leukemia cell line. Treatment of K562 cells with TPA resulted in growth arrest, polyploidy, morphological changes, and increased cell-cell and cell-substrate adhesion. These PMA-induced changes were preceded by a rapid rise in the MEK1 activity that resulted in the sustained ERK2 activation. The MEK1 inhibitor, PD098059, reversed both the growth arrest and the morphological changes induced by TPA treatment. These results demonstrate that the TPA-induced signaling cascade initiated by protein kinase C activation requires activity of MEK/ERK signaling complex in regulating cell cycle arrest (Herrera 1998).

TPA was used to inhibit apoptosis in HL-60 cells stimulated with the JNK/SAPK activator anisomycin. An increase in ERK activity was associated with the anti-apoptotic effect. The MEK1 inhibitor, PD98059, inhibited TPA-mediated ERK activity and abrogated the anti-apoptotic effects of TPA. Moreover, inhibition of apoptosis was attenuated by pretreatment with PKC inhibitors (Stadheim 1998).

c) **Retinoic acid (RA, vitamin A)**

Yen, et al., 1999 stated “Among the three major mitogen-activated protein kinase (MAPK) cascades—the extracellular signal regulated kinase (ERK) pathway, the c-JUN N-terminal/stress-activated protein kinase (JNK/SAPK) pathway, and the reactivating kinase (p38) pathway—retinoic acid selectively utilizes ERK but not JNK/SAPK or p38 when inducing myeloid differentiation of HL-60 human myeloblastic leukemia cells. Retinoic
acid is known to activate ERK2. The present data show that this activation is selective for the MAPK pathway. JNK/SAPK or p38 are not activated by retinoic acid.”

d) Interferon-\(\gamma\) (IFN\(\gamma\))

IFN\(\gamma\) activates both ERK and PKC in human peripheral blood monocytes (Liu 1994\(^{68}\)). IFN\(\gamma\) also induced ERK activation in rat C6 glioma cells. In C6 glioma cells, transient expression of the dominant-negative form of c-Ha-Ras (Asn-17) abrogated IFN\(\gamma\)-induced ERK1 and ERK2 activation. Furthermore, the MEK1 specific inhibitor, PD98059, blocked this activation. These results indicate that p21ras and MEK1 are required for IFN\(\gamma\)-induced ERK1 and ERK2 activation (Nishiya 1997\(^{69}\)).

e) Heregulin (HRG, or New differentiation factor, NDF)

Heregulin\(\beta\)1 (HRG\(\beta\)1) induced ERK activation and cell differentiation in AU565 breast carcinoma cells. ERK activation remained elevated for 2 h following high doses of HRG. The MEK specific inhibitor, PD98059, inhibited activation of ERK and completely blocked HRG-induced differentiation reversing cell growth arrest. A transient transfection of a mutant constitutively active MEK1 construct into AU565 cells induced differentiation in the absence of HRG. Treatment with HRG potentiated this response. This study indicates that HRG induces the sustained activation of the MEK/ERK pathway and that this activation is essential for inducing differentiation of AU565 cells (Lessor 1998\(^{70}\)).

HRG activated the MAP kinase isoforms p44ERK1 and p42ERK2 and the p70/p85 S6 kinase in AU565, T47D and HC11 cells. HRG stimulation caused growth arrest of the AU565 cells and proliferation of the T47D or HC11 cells. HRG also stimulated tyrosine phosphorylation and \textit{in vitro} kinase activity of ErbB-2. When PKC was activated by TPA, another ERK agent, HRG was no longer able to activate ErbB-2 in T47D cells, blocking cell proliferation. Activation of ErbB-2 by point mutation or monoclonal antibodies, also stimulated MAPK and p70/p85 S6 kinase pathways. The same monoclonal antibodies also induced AU565 cell differentiation (Marte 1995\(^{71}\)).

HRG\(\beta\)2 stimulation of MDA MB-453 cells resulted in tyrosine phosphorylation of p185c-erbB2 and p180erbB4 receptors in a time- and dose-dependent fashion. Activation
of ERK ( > 30-fold over untreated controls) was observed upon receptor(s) activation, as was the induction of the immediate early gene c-fos ( > 200-fold) (Sepp-Lorenzino 199672). In another study, HRGβ2, the ligand for erbB3 and erbB4 caused ERK activation and mitogenesis of growth arrested T-47D human breast cancer cells. The MEK1 specific inhibitor, PD98059, completely blocked HRG-induced entry into S-phase (Fiddes 199873).

**j) Zinc (Zn) and copper (Cu)**

Egr1, an immediate early transcription factor, is induced after brain insults by an unknown mechanism. Short exposure to zinc led to sustained ERK activation (Park 199974). The MEK1 inhibitor, PD098059, inhibited ERK1/2 activation, Egr1 induction, and neuronal death by zinc. That study concluded that zinc activates ERK1/2 (Park 1999). In another study, zinc enhanced ERK activity in serum-starved Swiss 3T3 cells treated with insulin and phosphocholine (Kiss 199775).

The human bronchial epithelial cell line BEAS was exposed to noncytotoxic levels of metals including Cu and Zn. Kinase activity assays and Western blots (with phospho-specific MEK1 antibody) showed that MEK1 is activated by Cu or Zn treatment. Additional Western blots using phospho-specific ERK1/2 antibody showed that PD98059, the selective MEK1 inhibitor, blocked the metal induced phosphorylation of ERK1/2 (Wu 199976). Activity assays of another study showed a dramatic activation of ERK, JNK and p38 in BEAS cells exposed to Zn, while Cu exposure led to a relatively small activation of ERK (Samet 199877).

**g) Estron, estradiol**

Treatment of human mammary cancer MCF-7 cells with estradiol stimulates rapid and transient activation of ERK1/2. Estradiol activates the tyrosine kinase/p21ras/ERK pathway in MCF-7 cells (Migliaccio 199678).

Uterine smooth muscle from rats pretreated with estradiol-17 β alone or with estradiol-17 β and progesterone were tested for ERK expression and activity by immunoblotting with ERK1/2 antibodies and phosphorylation assays. Estrogen and progesterone both enhanced ERK activity (Ruzyczky 199679).
In another study, immunoblot analyses and phosphorylation assays showed that estradiol-17 β (E2) stimulated ERK1/2 in rat cardiomyocytes. Specifically, the activation of ERK1/2 was rapid and transient, while a rapid but sustained increase of JNK phosphorylation was observed (Nuedling 199980).

5  

**i)**  *Interleukin 1β (IL-1β)*

Treatment with IL-1β in cultured human airway smooth muscle cells increased levels of phosphorylated ERK (p42 and p44) 8.3- and 13-fold, respectively. Pretreatment of the cells with the MEK1 inhibitor PD98059 decreased ERK phosphorylation (Laporte 199981).

IL-1β treatment of HepG2 cells activated three ERK cascades, p46/54(JNK), p38, and ERK1/2. There was maximal induction of 20-, 25-, and 3-fold, respectively, in these three cascades (Kumar 199882). In another study, Western blotting and kinase assays showed that IL-1β activates ERK1/2 and p38 in islets and rat insulinoma cells (Larsen 199883).

15  

**j)**  *Interleukin 6 (IL-6)*

The cytokine IL-6 utilizes its 80-kDa ligand-binding and 130-kDa signal-transducing subunits to trigger cellular responses. Treatment of the human B cell line, AF-10, with rIL-6 activated ERK. Activation of ERK in AF-10 cells occurred at the same time as the appearance of 42- and 44-kDa tyrosine phosphoproteins (p42 and p44) (Daeipoou 199384). When AF-10 cells were induced with rIL-6 in the presence of the tyrosine kinase inhibitors, genistein and geldanomycin, ERK activation decreased. These results indicate that IL-6 activates ERK1/2.

20  

**j)**  *Tumor necrosis factor α (TNFα)*

TNFα stimulates IL-6 production in renal cells in culture. Human primary mesangial cells (HMCs) and human proximal tubular (HPT) cells were treated for 24 hours with TNFα in the presence and absence of the specific p38 and ERK1/2 inhibitors SB203580 and PD98059, respectively, either alone or in combination. TNFα normally
activates p38 and ERK1/2. The inhibitors SB203580 and PD98059 inhibited basal and TNFα-stimulated IL-6 production in both cell types (Leonard 1999).

**k) Transforming growth factor β (TGFβ)**

TGFβ inhibits many epithelial cell types. Both TGFβ1 and TGFβ2 trigger rapid activation of p44MAPK in two proliferating epithelial cell lines, IEC4-1 and CCL64. Results for a third TGFβ resistant cell line, IEC4-6 showed no activation of p44MAPK after TGFβ stimulation. Resting cultures of IEC4-1 cells treated with TGFβ2 led to no significant change in either DNA synthesis or p44MAPK activity. However, addition of the growth-stimulatory combination of factors (epidermal growth factor, insulin, and transferrin (EIT)) to quiescent and proliferating IEC4-1 cells stimulated DNA synthesis and led to activation of p44MAPK. The specificity for the cellular effects of growth factors may not actually occur at the level of MAPK activation, but instead at downstream events including phosphorylation of transcriptional complexes and gene activation (Hartsough 1995).

TGFβ1 also stimulates articular chondrocyte cell growth and the formation of the extracellular matrix. *In vitro* kinase assays showed a rapid activation of ERK induced by TGFβ1 (Yonekura 1999). The stimulation peaked at 5 min, and dropped back to basal levels within 240 min after TGFβ1 stimulation. After 240 minutes of stimulation, the c-Jun N-terminal kinase activity increased only about 2.5-fold, while there was no significant change in p38MAPK activity. PD98059 decreased TGFβ1 induced Elk1 phosphorylation in a dose-dependent manner (Yonekura 1999).

**l) Oxytocin (OT)**

Oxytocin (OT) treatment triggers the rapid phosphorylation of ERK2 in Chinese hamster ovary (CHO) cells (Strakova 1998). The MEK1 specific inhibitor, PD98059, significantly reduced OT-stimulated prostaglandin (PGE) synthesis (Strakova 1998). Oxytocin receptors (OTRs) are found in a number of human breast tumors and tumor cells. In a study of breast cancer cells (Hs578T cells), OT stimulated ERK2 phosphorylation and PGE2 synthesis in Hs578T cells (Copland 1999).
The rat oxytocin receptor was transfected into Chinese hamster ovary cells. Oxytocin stimulated ERK2 phosphorylation and PGE synthesis through protein kinase C activity (Hoare 1999\textsuperscript{90}). Deletion of 51 amino acid residues from the carboxyl terminus of the oxytocin receptor resulted in decreased affinity for oxytocin. Cells expressing the truncated receptor showed no oxytocin-stimulated ERK2 phosphorylation or PGE synthesis (Hoare 1999).

3. Phosphorylation of GABP

ERK phosphorylates GABP\textalpha{} and GABP\textbeta{} but phosphorylation does not change the binding of GABP\textalpha{} to DNA (Flory, 1996\textsuperscript{91}, Avots, 1997\textsuperscript{92}, Hoffmeyer, 1998\textsuperscript{93}, Tomaras, 1999\textsuperscript{94}).

Phosphorylation is known to increase binding or stabilize the complex of p300 and other transcription factors, such as NF-\textkappa{}B unit p65 and Bbf (Zhong 1998\textsuperscript{95}, Bevilacqua 1997\textsuperscript{96}). The following sections present evidence consistent with the discovery that ERK phosphorylation of GABP leads to increased binding of p300 to GABP to stabilize the GABP\textbullet{}p300 complex.

\textit{a) ERK phosphorylation of GABP increases N-Box DNase-I hypersensitivity}

Histone acetylation occurs post-translationally, and reversibly, on the \textepsilon{}-NH\textsubscript{3}+ groups of lysine residues embedded in the N-terminal tails of core histones. Histone acetyltransferases (HATs) transfer the acetyl moiety from acetyl coenzyme A to the \textepsilon{}-NH\textsubscript{3}+ groups of internal lysine residues. Introduction of the acetyl group to lysine neutralizes the positive charge, increases hydrophobicity and leads to unfolding of chromatin (Kuo 1998\textsuperscript{97}). Histone hyperacetylation correlates with sensitivity to digestion by deoxyribonuclease I (DNase-I) (Hebbes 1994\textsuperscript{98}). Moreover, binding of a transcription complex with HAT activity to DNA enhances DNase-I hypersensitivity around the DNA binding site. p300 has HAT enzymatic activity so that binding the GABP\textbullet{}p300 complex enhances DNase-I hypersensitivity around the N-box.

Porcine peripheral blood mononuclear cells (PBMC) were stimulated with the ERK agent TPA. The treatment consistently enhanced DNase-I hypersensitivity of the
third intron enhancer of the TNFα gene (Kuhnert 1992\textsuperscript{99}). The major transcription factor that binds the enhancer site in the third intron of TNFα gene is GABP (Tomaras 1999\textsuperscript{100}). TPA treatment phosphorylated ERK which in turn phosphorylated GABP. Phosphorylation of GABP increased binding of p300. It is therefore likely that the HAT activity of p300 acetylated the histones and enhanced DNase-I hypersensitivity of the third intron enhancer.

b) \textit{ERK phosphorylation of GABP synergizes with p300 stimulation}

Human neuroepithelioma CHP126 cells were transfected with a construct containing the promoter of human choline acetyltransferase (ChAT) gene fused to the luciferase reporter gene (ChAT-luciferase). These cell were stimulated with the ERK agent trapoxin which increased luciferase expression 8-fold. In a second experiment the cells were transfected with an expression vector carrying full-length p300. p300 expression increased luciferase expression 5- to 10-fold. In a third experiment the cells were transfected with p300 and stimulated with trapoxin. The combined treatment increased luciferase expression 94-fold (Espinós 1999\textsuperscript{101}). Trapoxin phosphorylated ERK which in turn phosphorylated GABP. The combined effect of GABP phosphorylation and p300 transfection on transcription was more than additive.

This greater than additive increase in transcription demonstrates that two stimulators act in the same pathway, or in pathways that merge, to increase transcription from a single promoter. If the stimulators were acting independently, the largest possible level of transcription from the two together would be the sum of the two pathways, with each stimulator increasing transcription as if the other were not present (Herschlag 1993\textsuperscript{102}). A compelling interpretation of the “more than additive” results above is that phosphorylation of GABP increased binding of p300.

c) \textit{Inhibition of ERK phosphorylation blocks p300 stimulation}

H7 is an inhibitor of serine/threonine protein kinases. ERK, a serine/threonine protein kinase is therefore inhibited by H7. Activation of the ChAT promoter by either the ERK agent trapoxin or the ERK agent sodium butyrate was inhibited by 40 μM of H7. Activation of the ChAT promoter by p300 was also inhibited by H7 in a dose-dependent
manner. H7 also suppressed the synergistic activation of the ChAT promoter triggered by trapoxin and p300 (Espinosa 1999103). Inhibition of GABP phosphorylation decreased binding of p300, which reduced transcription.

d) Inhibition of p300 binding blocks stimulation by ERK phosphorylation

GABP binds p300 in between amino acids 1572 and 2370 (Bannert 1999104) while the adenovirus E1A protein binds p300 between amino acids 1572 and 1818 (Eckner 1994105). E1A and GABP, therefore, share an overlapping binding site on p300. By displacing GABP from p300, E1A reduces the effectiveness of GABP phosphorylation. Activation of the SV40 minimal promoter and the ChAT promoter by the ERK agent sodium butyrate and by p300 was suppressed by adenovirus E1A protein (Espinosa 1999).

ERK phosphorylation of GABP increases transcription. Raf-1, a kinase involved in the ERK pathway, works with GABP to stimulate HIV-1 promoter activity (Flory 1996106). These results support the idea that Raf-1 activates GABPα-and GABPβ-mediated gene expression. Further tests showed that GABP is phosphorylated in vivo by Raf-1 kinase activators (e.g. serum and TPA) and constitutive versions of Raf-1 kinase. The basal phosphorylation level of GABPα and GABPβ increased 2- to 4-fold after stimulation with serum and TPA (Flory 1996).

To identify kinases of GABPα and β, bacterially expressed GABPα and β proteins were tested as substrates in in vitro kinase assays. Raf-1 did not phosphorylate GABP subunits in vitro, but phosphorylation of both GABPα and GABPβ was detected in the reaction mixture containing MEK1, ERK2, GABPα, and GABPβ. ERK1 yielded similar results. A kinase-inactive ERK1 did not phosphorylate GABPα and β (Flory 1996). These results suggest that ERK1 directly phosphorylates both GABPPα and GABPβ.

A DNA segment in the upstream region of the human IL-2 gene contains a transcription enhancer (-502 to -413). Which binds the transcription factor GABPα and GABPβ at -462 nt to -446 nt (designated ERE-B) and -440 to -424 nt (designated ERE-A) (Avots 1997107) respectively.
GABP is a target of the MAP signal transduction pathway in T cells. c-Raf enhances IL-2 induction through GABP factors. Co-transfection of a CAT reporter gene controlled by the distal enhancer with GABPα and β expression vectors into cells showed an increase in CAT activity. Mutation of one or both ERE motifs abrogated the induction, underscoring the important functional role of GABP binding for induction of the distal enhancer. These data indicate that the c-Raf mediated increase of IL-2 induction is, at least partially, mediated by the GABP factors binding to the two ERE motifs (Avots 1997). According to Avots, et al., there appears to be an important role for the MAP pathway in induction of GABP factors binding to and controlling the distal IL-2 ERE enhancer motifs in T cells (Avots 1997).

4. **ERK agents and microcompetition**

The relationship between ERK singaling and microcompetition is summerized in figure 7.

Microcompetition between a GABP virus and cellular DNA reduces the availability of GABP to cellular genes. Let \([\text{N-box}_v]\) denote the cellular concentration of viral N-boxes. Let \([\text{GABP}_c]\) and \([\text{GABP}_v]\) denote the concentration of GABP bound to cellular genes and viral DNA, respectively. \([\text{GABP}_v]\) is a function of \([\text{N-box}_v]\). For every \([\text{N-box}_v]>0\), microcompetition reduces \([\text{GABP}_v]\). An ERK agent phosphorylates GABP and stimulates p300 binding. If \([\text{N-box}_v]\) is fixed, the ERK agent stimulates the transcription of GABP stimulated genes and suppresses the transcription of GABP inhibited genes.

Fixed \([\text{N-box}_v]\) seems to hold in cases of latent infection. In such cases, ERK phosphorylation of GABP, stimulates the formation of N-box,•GABP,•p300 complexes. However, there is no increase in viral replication, which might have further reduced the availability of p300 to cellular genes and diminished or even canceled the ERK effect.
5. JNK/SAPK pathway

a) Phosphorylation of GABP

Another signaling pathway which phosphorylates GABP is JNK/SAPK (see a figure of pathway in ERK pathway section above). Consider the following study.

To study the effects of JNK/SAPK on GABP, *in vivo*, HEK-293, human embryonic kidney cells were transfected with GABPα and GABPβ expression vectors alone, or in combination with SAPKβ expression vector and metabolically labeled with $[^{32}P]$orthophosphate. The cells were treated with anisomycin to strongly activate SAPK without affecting ERK activity. The results showed increased phosphorylation of both GABPα and GABPβ. The phosphorylation was further increased with SAPKβ overexpression (Hoffmeyer 1998$^{108}$, Fig 5A and B). The study next tested the ability of these kinases to phosphorylate GABP *in vitro*, using ERK as a positive control. *In vivo* activated and immunopurified GST-tagged SAPKβ, but not Flag-tagged p38, phosphorylated both subunits of GABP (Ibid, Fig. 6B). Bacterially expressed, purified, and preactivated GST-SAPKαI also phosphorylated both GABP subunits *in vitro* like GST-c-Jun (Ibid, Fig. 6C). Both activated SEK and 3pK did not phosphorylate GABP. Next, the study tested another JNK/SAPK isozyme, JNK1/SAPKγ. In addition to ERK, untreated or TPA/ionomycin-stimulated A3.01 cells (a human T lymphoma cell line) phosphorylated both GABPα and GABPβ *in vitro* (Ibid, Fig. 6A). Based on these results, Hoffmeyer, *et al.*, concluded that “the ability of three different isoforms of JNK/SAPK (SAPKα, SAPKβ, and JNK1) to phosphorylate GABP *in vitro*, in combination with the *in vivo* phosphorylation of GABP upon SAPK activation by anisomycin, suggests that GABP is targeted by JNK/SAPK-activating pathways.”

III. Discovery 3: N-box•GABP binding regulation

1. Redox regulation of GABP N-box binding

Oxidative stress decreases binding of GABP to the N-box, reduces transcription of GABP stimulated genes and increases transcription of GABP suppressed genes. Consider the following study.
Mouse 3T3 cells were treated for 2 h with diethyl maleate (DEM), a glutathione (GSH)-depleting agent, in the presence or absence of N-acetylcysteine (NAC), an antioxidant and a precursor of GSH synthesis. Following treatment, the cells were harvested, and nuclear extracts were prepared in the absence of a reducing agent. GABP DNA binding activity was measured by EMSA analysis using oligonucleotide probes containing a single N-box (AGGAAG) or two tandem N-boxes (AGGAAGAGGAAG). Treatment of 3T3 cells with DEM resulted in a dramatic decrease in formation of the GABP hetrodimer (GABPαGABPβ), (Martin 1996<sup>109</sup>, Fig. 2A, lane 2) and hetrotetramer (GABPα<sub>2</sub>GABPβ<sub>2</sub>), (Ibid, Fig. 2A, lane 6) complexes on the single and double N-box. Inhibition of GABP DNA binding activity by DEM treatment was prevented by simultaneous addition of NAC (Ibid, Fig. 2A, lanes 4 and 8). The reduction of GABP DNA binding activity was not due to loss of GABP protein since the amount of GABPα and GABPβ1 was unaffected by DEM or NAC treatment. Treatment of nuclear extracts prepared from DEM-treated 3T3 cells with dithiothreitol (DTT), an antioxidant restored GABP binding activity. Treatment of 3T3 nuclear extracts with 5 mM GSSG nearly abolished GABP DNA binding. Based on these observations Martin et al., concluded that GABP DNA binding activity is inhibited by oxidative stress, i.e. GSH depletion. The study also measured the effect of DEM treatment on expression of transiently transfected luciferase reporter constructs containing a TATA box with either upstream double N-box or C/EBP binding site (Ibid, Fig. 4). DEM treatment had no effect on luciferase expression from C/EBP-TA-Luc after 6 or 8 h treatment (Ibid, Fig. 4). However, DEM treatment of cells transfected with double N-box-TATA-Luc, resulted in a 28% decrease in luciferase expression after 6 h and a 62% decrease after 8 h (Ibid, Fig. 4). Based on these results, Martin et al., concluded that glutathione depletion inhibits GABP DNA binding activity resulting in reduced expression of GABP-regulated genes.

These results demonstrate that oxidative stress decreases GABP binding to the N-box which in turn decreases transcription of a GABP stimulated gene and increases transcription of a GABP repressed gene.
2. **Microcompetition as “excess oxidative stress”**

Microcompetition for GABP also decreases binding of GABP to the N-box. Take a GABP gene sensitive to oxidative stress through GABP only\(^1\). The effect of microcompetition on the transcription of this gene is similar to the effect of oxidative stress. In other words, for this gene, microcompetition can be viewed as “excess oxidative stress.”

IV. **Discovery 4: Molecular effects of microcompetition**

1. **Signaling**

   Let a GABP kinase be any enzyme which phosphorylates GABP. Since GABP is a new concept, we sometimes revert to ERK instead of GABP kinase. However, in such cases, unless specified, ERK actually means GABP kinase.

   **a) Sensitization by GABP**

   The statement “A stimulates B” means that A stimulates the expression of B either directly or indirectly. Let “AGENT” be a GABP kinase agent which activates the transcription factor GABP. Let GABP stimulate the expression of a protein P. Let [AGENT]_1 and [AGENT]_2 be two concentrations of AGENT with corresponding concentrations [P]_1 and [P]_2. The intensity of signal [AGENT]_1 relative to [AGENT]_2 is equal to [AGENT]_1/[AGENT]_2 = [P]_1/[P]_2. The intensity of an ERK signal is measured by its effect on transcription of the protein P.

   Let AGENT be a GABP kinase agent which activates the transcription factor GABP. Let (AGENT, GABP) denote the signaling pathway that leads from AGENT to GABP. Every protein R, such that R is an element of the signalling cascade (AGENT, GABP) will be called an “ERK receptor for AGENT.” In other words, AGENT activates the R protein, which in turn activates GABP. For example, the leptin long receptor is an ERK receptor for leptin, and metallothionein is an ERK receptor for zinc.

---

\(^1\) Oxidative stress also modifies binding of other transcription factors, such as AP1, and NF-kB.
Let AGENT be a GABP kinase agent. If there is a protein R in the signalling cascade (AGENT, GABP), such that AGENT stimulates the expression of R, the (AGENT, GABP) pathway will be called “sensitized” and R will be called the “sensitized receptor,” denoted R. Sensitization increases the intensity of a given signal by increasing the number of receptors available to be activated by a given amount of GABP kinase agent.

Let R be a sensitized receptor in (AGENT, GABP). If the expression of R is stimulated by GABP, R will be called an “internally sensitized receptor.” Consider figure 8.

An increase in AGENT stimulates the phosphorylation of GABP (step 1 and 2 in the figure). The phosphorylated GABP stimulates the transcription of R₁, the sensitized receptor (step 3). The new R₁ receptors increase the sensitivity of the pathway to a change in the concentration of the GABP kinase agent, that is, increase the probability of binding between the GABP kinase agent and R₁. The increased binding further increases the number of phosphorylated GABP molecules (step 4) in a positive feedback mechanism.

In the pathway (OT, OTR, GABP), the receptor OTR is stimulated by GABP (Hoare 1999110). In (zinc or copper, hMT-IIₐ, GABP), hMT-IIₐ is a receptor stimulated by GABP (see discussion above). In the pathway (LPS, CD1₈, GABP), CD1₈ is a receptor stimulated by GABP (Rosmarin 1998111). In the pathway, (IL-2, IL-2Rβ, γc, GABP), IL-2Rβ and γc are two receptors stimulated by GABP (Lin 1993112, Markiewicz 1996113).

According to the definition of an ERK receptor, GABP is also an ERK receptor. In addition, some GABP kinase agents increase the expression of GABP turning GABP from an ERK receptor into a sensitized receptor. Consider the following examples.

GABPβ and γ are similar proteins which differ only by homodimerization section in the C-terminal region. Antibodies which are not specific to the C-terminus bind both proteins. Such antibodies are not sensitive enough to identify a relative change in their expression. However, since GABPβ and GABPγ are almost always bound to GABPα, and since GABPβ is an activator and GABPγ is a suppressor (Suzuki 1998114), an increase in
GABPα with an increase in gene expression indicates an increase in the GABPβ concentration relative to γ.

IFNγ

Evidence suggests that interferon-γ (IFNγ) regulates GABP DNA binding by increasing the amount of the GABP proteins present in bone marrow-derived macrophages (BMDM) nuclei. IFNγ treatment of BMDM leads to induction of the binding activity (Tomaras, 1999\textsuperscript{115}). Since the GABPβ and GABPγ are almost always bound to GABPα, (Suzuki 1998), an increase in β most likely corresponds to an increase in GABPα.

The increase in DNA binding activity correlates with an increase in immunodetectable GABPα (Tomaras 1999). The essential sites for activity of GABP within the third intron of TNFα map to a highly conserved tandem repeat of ets-transcription factor binding sites. Mutations in the ets site within the intron inhibited this activity. A dominant-negative ets plasmid also completely negated this cooperativity. It was determined that a GGAA sequence repeat is a transcriptionally active site which interacts with an ets transcription factor. Specifically, GABP binds to this region. GABP binding activity is increased by treatment with IFNγ in BMDM (Tomaras 1999).

Herregulin

Herregulin increases GABPα expression specifically (Schaffer 1998). Western blot analysis of herregulin treated and non-treated cells showed that herregulin treatment leads to a 2-fold increase in the protein level of GABPα, while the GABPβ protein level was unaffected (Schaffer 1998).

PMA

Bottinger, et al., 1994\textsuperscript{116} defined the minimal defined promoter for CD18 (β2 integrin) expression in myeloid and lymphoid cells by generating 5' and 3' deletion constructs of a segment ranging 785 bp upstream and 19 bp downstream of a major transcription start site. The region extending from nucleotides -302 to +19 supported cell-restricted and phorbol ester-inducible expression. Two adjacent promoter regions, from nt
-81 to -68 (box A) and -55 to -41 (box B), were revealed by DNase-I footprinting of this region. DNA-binding proteins that interact with box A and box B were identified through electrophoretic mobility shift assays. Using box A as a probe yielded a major complex, designated BA-1 which increased in intensity after phorbol ester-induced differentiation of the cells. The complex was also detected using the radiolabeled box B element. The complex is homologous to GABP. Antiserum specific to GABPα or GABPβ abrogated binding of BA-1, while antisera to other ets-transcription factors had no effect (Bottinger 1994) thereby demonstrating the specificity of this interaction.

Expression of CD18 corresponds to the DNase-I protection profiles observed in vitro, suggesting that the complexes that bind to the protected elements mediate tissue specific expression of the CD18 gene. In T cells, the BA-1 complex forms over the box A and box B elements and is apparently responsible for the DNase-I protection profiles seen. Despite the formation of the same complex in the HeLa CD18 negative cell line, there is no observed DNase-I protection (Bottinger 1994).

In T cells the expression of GABPα and GABPβ increase. Since GABPαβ is an activator, Bottinger observed increased expression of CD18 and DNase-I protection on the CD18 promoter. In HeLa cells GABPα and GABPγ increase. Since GABPαγ is a suppresser, Bottinger observes no expression of CD18 and little DNase-I protection on the CD18 promoter.

b) Resistance

(1) Hypothesis

(a) Resistance

Traditionally, there are two definitions of resistance, cellular level resistance and patient level resistance.

**Cellular level resistance:** Let L denote a ligand and O a cell. Let L produce the effect Y in O. The cell O will be called “L resistant” if a given concentration of L produces a smaller Y effect in O relative to control.
**Patient level resistance:** Let L denote a ligand. A patient will be called “L resistant” if the patient shows elevated levels of L relative to controls. Patient level resistance is sometimes called hyper-L-emia. Example: Insulin resistance as observed in late onset (type II) diabetes and hyperinsulinemia.

(b) **Control**

Let AGENCY be a GABP kinase agent and let C be a protein. If the expression of AGENCY depends on the expression of C, C will be called a “control” for AGENCY. If an increase in C represses the expression of AGENCY, or increases its degradation, C will be called a “negative control” and the effect on AGENCY termed “feedback inhibition.”

Let AGENCY be an GABP kinase agent with the (AGENT, GABP) pathway. If GABP stimulates C, C will be called a “GABP stimulated” control. Consider figure 9.

AGENT phosphorylates GABP (step 1 and 2). GABP increases the transcription of C (step 3). C decreases the expression of the GABP kinase agent (step 4).

(c) **Microcompetition causes resistance**

**Cellular level resistance**

Let AGENCY be a GABP kinase agent with the (AGENT, GABP) pathway. Let AGENCY produce the effect Y in the cell O. Let the Y effect be dependent on transcription of a GABP gene X in O. Under microcompetition in O, a given concentration of AGENCY produces a smaller concentration of X and a smaller Y effect.

**Patient level resistance**

Let AGENCY be a GABP kinase agent with the (AGENT, GABP) pathway. Let C be a negative control for AGENCY which is also GABP stimulated. Microcompetition for GABP elevates the concentration of AGENCY. As a GABP kinase agent, AGENCY phosphorylates the pool of GABP molecules. Phosphorylation of GABP increases C which in turn represses AGENCY. However, microcompetition reduces the size of the GABP pool, or the amount of GABP available to stimulate C. Therefore, microcompetition diminishes the increase in the control C, which lessens the repression.
effect on A. In the above figure, the size of the arrow in step 2 would be smaller, hence
the size of the arrow in step 3 would be smaller as would be that of the arrow in step 4.

Note that the control C in the above figure is down stream from GABP. What if
the control is positioned between the GABP kinase agent and GABP? Would
microcompetition cause patient level resistance in such a pathway?

Let R be an internally sensitized receptor in (AGENT, GABP) with C as a negative
control for AGENT. If R stimulates C (C is downstream from R), microcompetition for
GABP elevates the concentration of AGENT. This is illustrated by figure 10.

AGENT phosphorylaes GABP (step 1 and 2). GABP increases the transcription of
R₁ (step 3). R₁ increases the effect on GABP (step 4A) and increases the expression of the
control C (step 4B), which then decreases the expression of the GABP kinase agent (step
5). Microcompetition decreases the size of the arrows in step 2, 3, 4A, 4B and 5.

If the control is down stream from the sensitized receptor, microcompetition causes
patient level resistance.

Consider the following two pathways (OT, OTR, GABP), (zinc or copper, hMT-
II₄, GABP) as examples. In these pathways, the sensitized receptor directly binds the
GABP kinase agent. Therefore, the control must be down stream from the sensitized
receptor, and the pathways must show patient level resistance under microcompetition.
This conclusion can be reached independent of any information about the control. The
pathway (LPS, CD18, GABP) is similar. Elicitation of a bioequivalent reaction requires a
higher concentration of LPS in a cell infected by a GABP virus compared to a non
infected cell. The pathway (IL-2, IL-2Rβ, γc, GABP) is different (see below).

Let the set \{\{(AGENT₁, GABP, C_i)\}\} include all pathways with a GABP kinase
agent AGENT₁ and control Cᵢ downstream from GABP. For all AGENT₁,
microcompetition for GABP reduces the expression of Cᵢ, which, in steady state, increases
the concentration of AGENT₁. Using the resistance terminology, it can be said that
microcompetition for GABP causes cells infected with a GABP virus to show AGENTᵢ
patient level resistance.
2. **Oxidative stress**

Microcompetition intensifies the effects of oxidative stress (see chapter on atherosclerosis).

3. **Transcription**

5  a) **Retinoblastoma susceptibility gene (Rb)**

(1) GABP is an activator of Rb

Notations:

Rb represents the retinoblastoma susceptibility gene

pRb represents the retinoblastoma susceptibility protein

10  The Rb promoter includes a N-box at (-198,-193). Several experiments were performed in which plasmids were produced. pXRP1 included the normal (-686,-4) segment of the Rb promoter. pXRP3 included the same segment with a mutated N-box and RBF-1×4 included 4 copies of the Rb N-box as promoter. All promoters controlled expression of the luciferase (luc) reporter gene. Cotransfection of hGABPα and hGABPβ1 expression plasmids with pXRP1 into SL2 *Drosophila* cells showed a 10-fold increase in reporter gene activity. Cotransfection with RBF-1×4 showed a 13-fold increase. Cotransfection with pXRP3, the mutated N-box, showed no increase (Sowa 1997\(^1\)). Based on these observations, and other results, Sowa, *et al.*, concluded that hGABP has a strong transactivating effect on the Rb gene promoter, suggesting that hGABP is the main transactivator for the core promoter element of the Rb gene.

(2) Rb is a microcompetition-repressed gene

GABP viruses microcompete with the Rb promoter for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of cells decreases Rb expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in Rb expression.
b) **Breast cancer type 1 gene (BRCA1)**

(1) GABP is an activator of BRCA1

The BRCA1 promoter includes three N-boxes at (-200,-178). Plasmids with point mutations in the central N-box, alone or in combination with mutations in the other N-boxes, were transfected in MCF-7, a human breast cell line. The mutated plasmids showed a 3-fold reduction in promoter activity (Atlas 2000\textsuperscript{118}, Fig 2). Nuclear extracts from MCF-7 formed a specific complex with the N-boxes region. Through crosslinking, supershift assays and binding to recombinant GABP\(\alpha\beta\) (Ibid, Fig 4, 5), GABP\(\alpha\beta\) was identified as the main transcription factor interacting with the N-boxes. An artificial promoter containing the multimerized N-boxes region was transactivated by cotransfection with GABP\(\alpha\) and GABP\(\beta\) in both MCF-7 and T47D, another human breast cell line (Ibid, Fig 6). These observations indicate that BRCA1 is a GABP stimulated gene.

(2) BRCA1 is a microcompetition-repressed gene

GABP viruses microcompete with the BRCA1 promoter for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of cells will decrease BRCA1 expression. Moreover, higher concentrations of viral DNA, lead to greater decreases in BRCA1 expression.

c) **Fas gene (Fas, APO-1, CD95)**

(1) GABP is an activator of Fas

The Fas promoter includes two N-boxes at (-857,-852) and (-833,-828). Jurkat cells, a T cell line, were transiently transfected with a luciferase reporter gene driven by different lengths of the Fas promoter. The cells were stimulated for 10 h with anti-CD3 mAb, PMA and PMA/ionomycin. Deletion of the two N-boxes reduced activation by 50-75\% (Li 1999\textsuperscript{119}, Fig 1). Mutation of the N-boxes also reduced stimulated luciferase activity (Ibid, Fig 7). Cell stimulation resulted in formation of specific complexes on the N-boxes region. Mutation of the N-boxes reduced formation of these complexes (Ibid, Fig 4). Antibodies against GABP\(\alpha\) and \(\beta\) inhibited formation of these complexes (Ibid, Fig 6A). Two or four copies of the Fas/GABP site (-863,-820) were inserted into a reporter plasmid carrying the pGL3/promoter. Anti-CD3 mAb, PMA and PMA/ionomycin stimulated luciferase activity 8-20 fold in Jurkat transfected cells (Ibid, Fig 9). Mutation
of the N-boxes significantly reduced induction of luciferase activity in response to stimulation. These observations indicate that Fas is a GABP stimulated gene.

(2) Fas is a microcompetition-repressed gene.

GABP viruses microcompete with the Fas promoter for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of cells decreases Fas expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in Fas expression.

d) Tissue factor (TF) gene

(1) Transcription

(a) ETS related factor(s) repress TF transcription

(i) ETS related factor(s) bind (-363 to -343) and (-191 to -172)

A study used DNase I footprinting to map the sites of protein-DNA interaction on the (-383 to +8) fragment of the TF promoter. That study used nuclear extracts prepared from uninduced and lipopolysaccharide-induced THP-1 monocytic cells. Six regions were identified. Region number 7 (-363 to -343) and region number 2 (-191 to -172) contain an N-box. THP-1 extracts formed two complexes on a consensus N-box. Both complexes were competed with excess unlabeled N-box and 200-fold excess of a (-363 to -343) probe. The (-191 to -172) probe, although not as effective as the (-363 to -343) probe, showed approximately 30% reduction in N-box complex formation (Donovan-Peluso 1994, Fig. 9).

Another study used the (-231 to -145) fragment of the TF promoter as probe. Nuclear extracts prepared from uninduced and lipopolysaccharide-induced THP-1 monocytic cells formed two complexes on the (-231 to -145) probe. To characterize the proteins that interact with the DNA sequence, the study used the sc-112x antibody from Santa Cruz Biotechnology. According to the manufacturer’s literature, the antibody has broad cross-reactivity with members of the ETS family. Incubation of the antibody with the nuclear extracts abrogated the formation of the upper complex on the (-231 to -145) probe (Groupp 1996, Fig. 5).
Monocytic THP-1 cells were stimulated with LPS for various times up to 24 h. TF mRNA increased by 30 min and reached a peak at 1 h. Levels dropped considerably by 2 h returning, eventually, to preinduction levels (Hall 1999122, Fig. 1). The same study conducted EMSA studies using the (-213 to -172) fragment of the TF promoter. The results showed that two complexes, indicated as III and IV, appear at 30 min, with binding reaching a peak at 1-2 h. At 4 h and later, the complexes are no longer detected. A 100-fold molar excess of a (-213 to -172) probe, or a NF-κB consensus oligonucleotide, compete with complexes III and IV (Ibid, Fig. 2B). An antibody against p65 and to a lesser extent, anti-c-Rel, supershifted complex III. These data demonstrate a transient binding of two NF-κB complexes to the (-213 to -172) fragment between 30 min and 2 h. However, the affinity of complexes for the NF-κB site was much lower than the affinity of the complexes on the adjacent proximal AP1 site.

This study also provides evidence indicating that LPS induces proteolysis of IkB and translocation of p65 and c-Rel from the cytoplasm to the nucleus. Western blot analyses showed that very little p65 was present in the nucleus in unstimulated cells. After 10 min of LPS induction, nuclear p65 begins to appear and peak at 1 h, declining again by 2 h. A concomitant decrease in cytoplasmic p65 corresponds to the observed increase in nuclear p65 (Ibid, Fig. 4).

Holzmuller, et al., (1999123) call the (-363 to -343) fragment of the TF promoter the Py-box. Deletion of the 5'-half of the Py-box increased expression of a luciferase reporter gene (Ibid, Fig. 3A and B). The relative increase was similar for LPS induced or nontreated cells and was independent of the existence of NF-κB site (Ibid, Fig. 3C).

Mutation of the N-box part of the Py-box resulted in complete loss of binding activity to the Py-box.

Donovan-Peluso, et al., (1994124, see above) showed that the (-191 to -172) probe was less effective in competing with the consensus N-box compared to the (-363 to -343)
probe. According to the authors, the data suggest that there might be competition for binding to the (-191 to -172) fragment by NF-κB and ETS related factors. In such a case, NF-κB binding to a (-191 to -172) probe reduces the concentration of the probe available to for ETS binding. This competition can explain the reduced ability of (-191 to -172) to compete for ETS binding relative to (-363 to -343). Moreover, the NF-κB site and the N-box in the (-191 to -172) fragment overlap. The presence of overlapping sites also suggests competition where occupancy by either factor might preclude binding by the other.

Microcompetition between a GABP virus and the TF promoter decreases the availability of the ETS related complexes in the nucleus.

NF-κB binding to (-191 to -172) increases transcription. Competition between NF-κB and ETS related factors for (-191 to -172) suggests that the decrease in availability of the ETS related factors in the nucleus increases the binding of NF-κB to the (-191 to -172) fragment and increases TF expression.

Binding of ETS related factor(s) to the (-363 to -343) fragment represses transcription. The repression is similar in extracts from untreated, or LPS- or TNF-α-induced cells. Moreover, the repression is independent of NF-κB binding. This observation suggests that the ETS related factor(s) suppress transcription in quiescent cells and maintain the rates in activated cells at a moderate level (Holzmuller 1999\textsuperscript{125}). The decrease in availability of the ETS related factor(s) in the nucleus reduces the (-363 to -343) repression and increases TF expression.

The GABP virus microcompetes with the TF promoter for the ETS related factor(s), therefore, viral infection of monocytes/macrophages increases TF expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the increase in TF expression.

\textit{(b) GABP viruses increase TF expression}
41

(i) Transfection

A few studies measured the expression of TF relative to an internal control. Those studies used two controls, CMVβgal (Moll 1995\textsuperscript{126}, Nathwani 1994\textsuperscript{127}) and pRSVCAT (Mackman 1990\textsuperscript{128}). Although the studies used different transfection protocols; Moll, \textit{et al.}, (1995) used psoralen- and UV-inactivated biotinylated adenovirus and streptavidine-poly-L-lysine as vectors for DNA delivery, Nathwani, \textit{et al.}, (1994) used electroporation and Mackman, \textit{et al.}, (1990) used DEAT-dextran, they all report an increase in TF expression relative to a promoterless plasmid. According to Moll, \textit{et al.}, (1995), the cells "are already partially activated following the transfection procedure." The level of activation was similar in unstimulated and LPS stimulated cells. The internal controls include promoters of GABP viruses. The control promoters microcompete with the TF promoter for ETS related factor(s). The reduced availability of ETS related factor(s) increases the transcription of the reporter gene fused to the TF promoter.

(ii) Infection

Confluent monolayers of human umbilical vein endothelial cells (HUVEC) were exposed to 0.1 μg/ml LPS for 4 hours and HSV-1. At appropriate time intervals, TF procoagulant activity (PCA) was assessed by clotting assays. Figure 11 presents the results.

Maximal TF PCA activity was observable 4 hours after infection and was still detectable 20 hours post infection. Both the HSV infection and LPS exposure show a similar activity profile over time. However, the maximal activity induced by HSV is about a 1/2 of LPS. Further studies with specific blocking antibodies to human TF support the notion that the PCA is indeed due to TF.

HUVEC were also infected with HSV-1 inactivated by either ultra-violet-irradiation or heat. The cellular TF PCA was measured in lysates of control, LPS stimulated (0.1 mg/ml for 4 hours), or infected cells. Virally infected cells were maintained in culture for up to 48 hours and visually inspected for cytopathic effects as evidence for lytic infection. Obvious morphologic changes were evident in cells infected with competent virus after 18 to 24 hours. In comparison, no signs of infection were visible in cells infected with heat or UV-treated virus even after 48 hours. The TF PCA of
the different treatments measured 4 hours post infection is summarized in the following table.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>TF PCA (U/ml)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Control</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LPS</td>
<td>1753</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HSV-1</td>
<td>773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heated HSV-1 (80° × 30 min)</td>
<td>691</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UV irradiated HSV-1</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Virus inactivated by UV or heat is still capable of inducing TF activity (Key 1993129).

This study measures the effect of infection with an inactivated GABP virus on TF transcription. The reduced TF transcription is consistent with microcompetition between the viral DNA and the TF promoter for the ETS related factor(s) despite the fact that the infecting viruses were not viable.

(c) The effect of ERK agents on TF transcription

Many papers report the effects of c-Fos/c-Jun, c-Rel/p65, Sp1 and Egr-1 binding on TF transcription. LPS and PMA are ERK agents and, therefore, phosphorylate the ETS related factors. However, LPS and PMA also stimulate the binding of NF-κB and Egr-1, respectively, to the TF promoter. In figure 12, the effect of LPS on NF-κB is presented by dotted lines, and on ERK by solid lines. As such, LPS and PMA are not useful in isolating the effect of ETS phosphorylation on TF transcription. The next section presents two ERK agents, all-trans retinoic acid (ATRA) and resveratrol, which have no effect on NF-κB, Ap1 and Sp1. As ERK agents, ATRA and resveratrol phosphorylate the ETS related factor(s), stimulate the binding of p300, and, therefore, should repress TF transcription.

(i) All-trans retinoic acid (ATRA)
Monocytes were incubated for 30 minutes with various doses of ATRA before LPS stimulation. ATRA inhibited LPS induction of TF expression in a dose-dependent manner (Oeth 1998\textsuperscript{130}, Fig. 1A). The LPS induction of TF activity was also inhibited by ATRA in THP-1 monocyctic cells (Ibid, Fig. 2A). Specifically ATRA reduced the basal levels of TF mRNA in unstimulated cells and abolished the LPS induction of TF mRNA (Ibid, Fig. 3A). However, ATRA did not affect DNA binding of the c-Fos/c-Jun, c-Rel/p65 or Sp1 transcription factors to the AP1, NF-κB and Sp1 sites.

(ii) Resveratrol (RSVL)

Confluent monolayers of human umbilical vein endothelial cells (HUVEC) were treated with resveratrol (100 μmol/L) for 2 hours. Following resveratrol treatment, the cells were stimulated for 6 hours with either LPS, TNFα, IL-1β, or PMA. The results showed that resveratrol markedly suppressed LPS-, TNFα-, IL-1β-, and PMA-induced TF activity (Pendurthi 1999\textsuperscript{131}, Fig. 1A). The inhibition varied from 60% to more than 90%. HUVEC monolayers were also treated with different concentrations of resveratrol (0 to 200 μmol/L) for 2 hours. Following resveratrol treatment, the cells were stimulated with TNFα, IL-1β, or PMA. The data showed that resveratrol inhibited the induction of TF expression in a dose-dependent manner. To test the effect of resveratrol in monocytes, mononuclear cell fractions were treated with various concentrations of resveratrol (0 to 100 μmol/L) for 2 hours and then stimulated with LPS (100 ng/mL) for 5 hours. The results showed that resveratrol inhibited LPS-induced TF expression in monocytes in a dose-dependent manner (Ibid, Fig. 2). To test the effect of resveratrol on TF mRNA, HUVEC monolayers were treated with various concentrations of resveratrol (0, 5, 20, 100, and 200 μmol/L) for 2 hours, and then stimulated with LPS, TNFα, IL-1β, or PMA for 2 hours. Resveratrol treatment reduced TF transcription in a dose-dependent manner.

However, the reduced transcription was not due to diminished binding of c-Fos/c-Jun or c-Rel/p65 to the TF promoter. Resveratrol did not significantly change the binding of c-Fos/c-Jun to the AP-1 sites. Resveratrol treatment had no significant effect on binding activity to the AP-1 site in either unstimulated or LPS-, TNFα-, IL-1β-, or PMA-stimulated endothelial cells (Ibid, Fig. 7). Resveratrol also did not significantly change the binding of NF-κB to the TF promoter. Unstimulated cells showed little binding of NF-κB, whereas LPS, TNFα, IL-1β, or PMA induced formation of a prominent DNA-protein
complex on the NF-κB site. Preincubation of cells with resveratrol (100 μmol/L) for 2 hours had no effect on formation of the NF-κB DNA-protein complex (Ibid, Fig. 8).

Both ATRA and resveratrol are ERK agents and, therefore, phosphorylate the ETS related factor(s). In general, phosphorylation of ETS related factor(s) stimulates binding of p300. The ETS•p300 complex, when bound to the TF promoter, represses TF transcription. The repression is independent of NF-κB, Ap1 or Sp1.

(2) Deactivation ("encryption") as a function of membrane concentration

(a) TF surface dimers are inactive

According to Bach, et al., (1997), surface TF exists in two forms, monomers and dimers. Both monomers and dimers bind FVIIa. However, only monomers are active. Self-association of TF monomers prevents access to an essential macromolecular substrate binding site. The concept of inactive (cryptic) dimers is consistent with the crystal structures of the extracellular domain of TF. The structure suggest that TF dimerization does not block FVIIa binding but covers the macromolecular substrate binding site on the opposite face of TF.

Bach, et al., (1997) provide ample evidence consistent with this model. Consider the following experiments. HL-60 cells were exposed to 10^{-6} mol/L PMA for various times. The intact cells were assayed for TF procoagulant activity (PCA) either before or following a brief exposure to 10 μmol/L ionomycin. In comparison to PMA treatment alone, a combined ionomycin and PMA testament resulted in a dramatic increase in expression of TF PCA (Ibid, Fig. 1). The rapid appearance of the activity suggests that de novo protein synthesis was not involved (Ibid, Fig. 2). The calcium influx activated the latent TF PCA. Also, the inhibition by calmidazolium (CMZ) implicates calmodulin (CaM) as an essential link in the process (Ibid, Fig. 3, 4). Moreover, FVIIa bound to TF on untreated cells as well as ionophore-treated cells (Ibid, Fig. 5, experiment 1 and 2). Thus, restricted formation of TF-FVIIa does not account for inactive (cryptic) TF PCA. The TF-FVIIa complex readily bound the pseudosubstrate tissue factor pathway inhibitor-activated factor X (TFPI-FXa) on ionophore-treated cells, but was resistant to TFPI-FXA inhibition on untreated cells. Similar inhibition on ionophore-treated cells was
demonstrated with XK1, another pseudosubstrate of TF-FVIIa. These results suggest that calcium influx exposes a TFPI-FXa/XK1 binding site on TF. Lastly, HL-60 cells were treated with DTSSP, a monobifunctional amino-reactive protein shown to cross-link cell surface TF. Following the treatment, TF was immunopurified and visualized by Western blotting. The products of DTSSP cross-linking were TF dimers (Ibid, Fig. 7, lane 1, 2).

When the cells were treated with ionomycin before cross-linking, almost no cross-linking was observed (Ibid, Fig. 7, lane 3). The decreased cross-linking suggests that TF does not self-associate on ionophore treated cells. Both the TF cross-linking and the encrypted TF PCA were preserved by treating the cells with CMZ before the addition of ionophore (Ibid, Fig. 7, lane 4).

(b) Increase in surface concentration induces dimers, reduces activity

Nemerson, et al., (1998) link the surface concentration of TF with its rate of catalytic activity. To establish such a link, Nemerson and Giesen incorporated a recombinant TF (TF1-243), which contained the transmembrane, but not the cytoplasmic domain, into appropriate phospholipid vesicles and measured their catalytic activity (k_{cat}).

The results showed that the k_{cat}, or catalytic rate constant, which reflects the catalytic activity of each TF-FVIIa molecule, fell monotonically as a function of TF surface density. Moreover, following exposure of vesicles with high surface-density of TF (about 50 molecules of TF on the surface of a 100 nm vesicle) to a cross-linking reagent, Nemerson and Giesen were able to detect dimers and higher n-mers. Nemerson and Giesen suggested that these results are consistent with a model where clustered TF molecules have lower maximal catalytic activity compared to dispersed molecules.

To test the significance of the cytoplasmic domain in activation, Wolberg, et al., (2000) transfected cells with either full length TF, or TF lacking its cytoplasmic domain. The results showed that TF activation by a calcium ionophore was independent of the cytoplasmic domain.

(c) TF self regulation through dimers

Schechter, et al., (1997) show the effect of agonist stimulation on TF surface concentration and activity over time. TF mRNA was barely detectable in quiescent aortic
smooth muscle cells (SMC) (Ibid, Fig. 1). FCS induced a marked rise in TF mRNA levels, beginning at ~ 1 h and persisting for ~ 8 h. Accumulation of TF mRNA in response to PDGF BB and α-thrombin was similar to that seen with 10% FCS (Ibid, Fig. 1). To test the effect of the rise in TF mRNA on protein synthesis over time, quiescent SMC were treated with growth agonist and examined by immunostaining every hour for the first 4 h, and every 2 h for additional 20 h. Untreated quiescent SMC showed minimal TF antigen. Cells stimulated with 10% FCS, PDGF AA, or BB, or thrombin receptor peptide, produced a pronounced perinuclear staining of TF antigen beginning at ~ 2 h and peaking at 4-6 h. At 4-6 hours, TF antigen was also detected diffusely on the ruffled edges of the plasma membrane. Perinuclear staining persisted for ~ 8-10 h after stimulation, and then gradually dissipated. At 16-24 h, a patchy distribution of antigen staining near or on the membrane was noted with diminished prinnuclear staining. Schecter, et al., (1997136) measured the intensity of immunofluorescent staining along a line which traverses the nucleus and connects opposite sides of the cell membrane, and displayed the results graphically. At 4 h, the graph shows a bimodal distribution with two peaks, around the nucleus and along the membrane (Ibid, Fig. 5a, insert). At 16 h, the graph shows a much smaller peak around the nucleus and a much larger peak along the membrane (Ibid, Fig. 5b, insert).

Schecter, et al., (1997137) also measured the effect of PDGF simulation on TF activity. PDGF induced an approximately fivefold increase in surface TF activity (Ibid, Fig. 7) 4-6 h after treatment, with a return to baseline by 20 h.

The temporal events reported in this study show that the initial increase in TF membrane staining (4 h post stimulation) is associated with an increase in TF activity, while the subsequent increase in membrane staining (16 h post stimulation) is associated with a decrease in TF activity. The patches of TF staining on the cell surface are most prominent at a time (10-12 h after agonist stimulation) when surface TF activity is minimal. The study finds this relationship intriguing and proposes that the patches may represent inactive TF multimers.
e) **P-selectin gene**

P-selectin (CD62P, GMP140, LECCAM-3, PADGEM) is expressed in megakaryocytes and endothelial cells. In endothelial cells P-selectin is stored in specialized granules known as Weibel-Palade (WP) bodies. After activation with inflammatory mediators, such as histamine, thrombin, or complement proteins, WP bodies fuse with the plasma membrane, resulting in increased P-selectin expression on the endothelial apical surface. One function of P-selectin is to mediate leukocyte adherence to activated endothelium.

(1) **Transcription**

(a) **GABP is a repressor of P-selectin**

Two conserved N-boxes were identified in the mouse and human P-selectin genes. The mouse distal N-box is positioned at (-327,-322) and the proximal at (-104,-99). The human distal N-box is positioned at (-314,-309) and the proximal at (-103,-108). A labeled probe encoding the murine proximal N-box formed two DNA-protein complexes with nuclear extracts from BAEC (Pan 1998, Fig. 6B), bEnd.3, HEL and CHRF288 cells. Complex formation varied with different batches of nuclear extracts, characteristic of GABP binding. Competition with a HSV-1 Immediate Early (IE) N-box probe, which binds GABP, prevented complex formation with BAEC nuclear extracts (Ibid, Fig. 6D). Based on these observations, Pan, *et al.*, concluded that the proximal N-box most likely binds the ubiquitously expressed GABP.

Mutation of the AGGAAG proximal N-box to AGCTAAG eliminated DNA-protein complex formation (Pan 1998, Fig. 6C). BAEC transfected with a reporter gene directed by the murine P-selectin promoter with the mutated N-box showed 2-10-fold increased expression compared to the wild-type promoter (Ibid, Fig. 6F). The increased transcription indicates that binding of the Ets related factor to the proximal N-box represses the P-selectin gene. Deletion of the distal N-box had no effect on reporter gene expression. The increased transcription of the mutated gene indicates that GABP is a repressor of P-selectin.
(b) **Microcompetition stimulates P-selectin transcription**

GABP viruses microcompete with the P-selectin promoter for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of endothelial cells increases P-selectin expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the increase in P-selectin expression.

### f) $\beta_2$ integrin gene

(1) **Transcription**

(a) **GABP is an activator of $\beta_2$ integrin**

$\beta_2$ integrin (CD18) is a leukocyte-specific adhesion molecule. GABP binds three N-boxes in the CD18 promoter and transactivates the gene (Rosmarin 1995\textsuperscript{139}, Rosmarin 1998\textsuperscript{140}).

(b) **Microcompetition represses $\beta_2$ transcription**

Latent infection by a GABP virus results in microcompetition between viral DNA and CD18 promoter which decreases the expression of CD18 (see Le Naour 1997\textsuperscript{141}, Tanaka 1995\textsuperscript{142}, Patrarryo 1988\textsuperscript{143} above). Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in CD18 expression.

### g) $\alpha_4$ integrin gene

$\alpha_4$ integrin (CD49d) is expressed in B cells, thymocytes, monocytes/macrophages, granulocytes and dendritic cells. $\alpha_4$ binds $\beta_1$ integrin to form $\alpha_4\beta_1$ (CD49d/CD29, VLA-4). $\alpha_4\beta_1$ binds vascular cell adhesion molecule-1 (VCAM-1), which appears on the surface of activated endothelial cells, and fibronectin (Fn), a major component of the extra-cellular matrix (ECM).

(1) **Transcription**

(a) **GABP is an activator of $\alpha_4$ integrin**

Rosen, *et al.*, (1994\textsuperscript{144}) show that GABP binds the (-51,-46) N-box in the $\alpha_4$ promoter. The binding of GABP activated transcription of the $\alpha_4$ integrin gene in Jurkat cells, a T-cell line.
(b) **Microcompetition represses α₄ transcription**

Rosen, *et al.*, (1994) show that microcompetition with an Ets binding site from the Moloney sarcoma virus long terminal repeat inhibited binding of GABP to the α₄ integrin promoter. GABP viruses microcompete with the α₄ promoter for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of macrophages decreases α₄ expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in α₄ expression.

**h) Hormone sensitive lipase (HSL) gene**

Hormone sensitive lipase (HSL, Lipe, EC 3.1.1.3) is an intracellular neutral lipase highly expressed in adipose tissue. HSL is the rate limiting enzyme in triacylglycerol and diacylglycerol hydrolysis. HSL also mediates cholesterol esters hydrolysis generating free cholesterol in steroidogenic tissues and macrophages.

(1) HSL is a microcompetition-suppressed gene

(a) **N-box**

The region -780 bp 5' of exon 1 to the start of exon 1 was suggested to include potential regulatory sites of the human HSL gene in adipocytes (Talmud 1998¹⁴⁵, Grober 1997¹⁴⁶). This region includes 15 N-boxes. Moreover, three pairs are located within short distances of each other. The distance between the pair at (+268,+272), (+279,+285) is 5 bp or 1.0 helical turn (HT), at (+936,+942), (+964,+970) is 22 bp or 2.5 HT, and at (+1,253,+1259), (+1270,+1276) is 11 bp or 1.5 HT.

Of the dozens of known ETS factors, only GABP, as a tetrameric complex, binds two N-boxes. Typically, the N-boxes are separated by multiples of 0.5 helical turns (HT). There are 10 bp per HT. Consider the following table (based on Yu 1997¹⁴⁷, Fig 1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Sequence</th>
<th>Dist.*</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Murine Laminin B2</td>
<td>CTTCCTCCTGCGGCCTGCTCTGGAGGCTCGCGCTGGGAAG</td>
<td>26 bp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3.0 HT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human type IV collagenase</td>
<td>TTTCCGCTGCATCCAGAAGCTCCT</td>
<td>11 bp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.5 HT</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Species</th>
<th>Sequence</th>
<th>Length</th>
<th>Helical Turns</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Human CD4</td>
<td>AGGAGCCTTGGCCATCGGGGCTTCCT</td>
<td>12 bp</td>
<td>1.5 HT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murine CD4</td>
<td>AGGAGCCTCAGCGACCAGGCTTCCT</td>
<td>12 bp</td>
<td>1.5 HT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murine COX Vb</td>
<td>CGGAAGTGCCCGCCCATCTTGCTCAGCTGTTCCCGGAAAG</td>
<td>27 bp</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Murine COX IV</td>
<td>CTTCGGTTGCGGGCCCCGGTTTCTTCCG</td>
<td>15 bp</td>
<td>2.0 HT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ad2-ML</td>
<td>CGTCCTCACTCTCTTCCG</td>
<td>6 bp</td>
<td>1.0 HT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Helical turns</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0.5</td>
<td>1.0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Distance measure in bp (base pair) or HT (helical turns).

The 1.0, 2.5 and 1.5 helical turns separating the HSL N-boxes pairs is consistent with characteristic GABP heterotetramer binding.

It is interesting to note that the HSL testis-specific promoter also includes two N-boxes separated by 11 bp or 1.5 helical turns (Blaise 1999\(^{148}\)). Many “TATA-less” promoters bind GABP to an N-box in their initiator element. Specifically, HSL is a TATA-less gene. Three N-boxes on the HSL gene, (+35,+41) in exon B and (+964,+970), (+1110,+1116) in intron B are conserved in the mouse HSL gene (see sequence U69543 in Talmud 1998\(^{149}\)).

(b) **Transfection**

The Swiss mouse embryo 3T3-L1 fibroblasts can differentiate into adipocyte-like cells. The undifferentiated cells contain a very low level of HSL activity. While differentiated adipocyte-like cells show a 19-fold increase in HSL activity (Kawamura 1981\(^{150}\)).

3T3-L1 preadipocytes were induced to differentiate by incubation with insulin (10 µg/ml), dexamethasone (10 nM), and iBuMeXan (0.5 mM) for 8 consecutive days following cell confluency. HSL mRNA was measured in undifferentiated confluent controls and differentiated 3T3-L1 cells transfected with the ZIPNeo vector. Although differentiated 3T3-L1 cells usually show significant HSL activity, the 3T3-L1 differentiated cells transfected with ZIPNeo showed decreased HSL mRNA (Gordeladze
1997\textsuperscript{15}, Fig 11 left). ZIPNeo carries the Moloney murine leukemia virus LTR which binds GABP. Microcompetition between the viral LTR and the HSL promoter leads to reduced expression of the HSL gene.

The following section presents the clinical effect of microcompetition.

V. **Discovery 5: Clinical effects of microcompetition**

A. **Cancer**

1. **Effect of microcompetition on cell proliferation and differentiation**

   The current paradigm holds that, \textit{in vivo}, viral proteins are the mediators of host cell manipulation. Consider, as examples, the extensive research published on the SV40 large T antigen, Epstein-Barr virus BRLF1 protein, papilomavirus type 16 E6 or E7 oncoproteins or adenovirus E1A. The possibility of host cell manipulation independent of viral protein is ignored.\textsuperscript{2} This paradigm is so ingrained that even when protein-independent manipulation presents itself in the lab, the investigators disregard its significance. Consider the following studies as examples, each uses two types of plasmids. One plasmid includes a gene of interest, cellular Rb or viral T antigen. The other plasmid includes the neomycin-resistance (Neo) gene only under the control of a viral promoter. This plasmid is regarded as “empty,” and is, therefore, used as control. All three studies report results showing a significant effect of the “empty” plasmid on cell cycle progression, increased proliferation and reduced differentiation. However, none of these studies includes any reference to these results. The results are completely ignored.

---

\textsuperscript{2} A possible exception might be integration of viral DNA into cellular genome. Such integration may result in mutations, deletions or methylation of in host cell DNA. However, even this manipulation of cellular function is mediated, in many cases, by viral proteins. Consider, as examples, the HIV-1 IN protein or the retrovirus integrase which mediate viral integration.
a) Microcompetition stimulates proliferation

HuH-7 human hepatoma cells were transfected with pBARB, a plasmid in which the β-actin promoter regulates the expression of the Rb gene and the simian virus (SV40) promoter regulates the expression of the neomycin-resistance (neo) gene. The cells were also transfected with the pSV-neo plasmid, which only includes the SV40 promoter on the neo gene. Since pSV-neo does not include the β-actin promoter and the Rb gene, it was regarded as "empty" and was used as control. The cells were incubated in the chemically defined medium IS-RPMI with 5% FBS or serum free IS-RPMI. The number of viable cells were counted at the indicated times. The results are summarized in figure 15 (Awazu 1998152, Fig 2A). Wild means non transfected cells. The SD is about the size of the triangular and circular symbols.

Rb transfection resulted in reduced cell proliferation at day 6 relative to non transfected "wild" type HuH-7 cells. Transfection of the "empty" vector resulted in increased proliferation. The "empty" vector includes the SV40 promoter which binds GABP. Microcompetition between the viral promoter and cellular genes leads to increased proliferation (for the identity of the cellular genes, see below).

b) Microcompetition inhibits differentiation

HSV-neo is a plasmid that expresses the neomycin-resistance gene under the control of murine Harvey sarcoma virus long terminal repeat (LTR) (Armelin 1984153). pZIPNeo expresses the neomycin-resistant gene under the control of the Moloney murine leukemia virus long terminal repeat (Cepko 1984154). PVU0 carries an intact early region of the SV40 genome which expresses the SV40 large tumor antigen and SV40 small tumor antigen (Higgins 1996155). The murine 3T3-L1 preadipocytes were transfected with PVU0. The cells were also transfected with HSV-neo and pZIPNeo as "empty" controls. Following transfection, the cells were cultured under differentiation inducing conditions. Glycerophosphate dehydrogenase (GPD) activity was measured as a marker of differentiation. The results are presented in the following table (Higgins 1996156, Table 1, first four lines).
Transfection of PVU0 and expression of the large and small T antigens resulted in a statistically significant decrease in GPD activity. However, transfection of the “empty” vectors, HSV-neo and ZIPNeo, although less than PVU0, also reduced GPD activity. In a t-test, assuming unequal variances, the p-value for the difference between the HSV-neo vector and no vector is 0.118, and the p-value for the difference between ZIPNeo and no vector is 0.103. Given that the sample includes only two observations, a p-value around 10% for vectors carrying two different LTRs indicates a trend. Both the murine Harvey sarcoma virus LTR and the Moloney murine leukemia virus LTR bind GABP.

Microcompetition between the viral LTR and the 3T3-L1 preadipocyte GABP genes regulating cell cycle leads to the reduced differentiation, indicated by the reduced GPD activity.

The wild-type early region of SV40 was inserted into the “empty” pZIPNeo plasmid (same plasmid as in Higgins 1996, see above). The new plasmid is called the “wild-type” (WT) and expresses the SV40 large T antigen. 3T3-F442A preadipocytes were transfected with either WT or pZIPNeo. Accumulation of triglyceride, assayed by oil red staining, was used as a marker of differentiation. Seven days postconfluence, the number of staining of cells was recorded. Consider figure 16. Darker staining indicates increased differentiation. (A) marks untreated F442A cells, (B) marks cells transfected with ZIPNeo, (C) marks cells transfected with WT (Cherington 1988\textsuperscript{3}, Fig 4 A, B and C).

Transfection with WT, the vector expressing SV40 large T antigen, reduced differentiation, see triglyceride staining in (C) and (A). However, transfection with the “empty” vector, although less than WT, also reduced differentiation, see triglyceride staining in (B) relative to(A) and (C).
pZIPNeo utilizes the Moloney murine leukemia virus long terminal (LTR), a region which binds GABP. Microcompetition between the viral LTR and the cellular genes regulating cell cycle progression leads to reduced differentiation, indicated by reduced accumulation of triglyceride.

2. Pathogenesis

a) Rb

(1) Hypophosphorylated form of pRb and cell cycle

The cell cycle starts with a growth period (G1). Prior to a time in late G1, called R-point, the cell “decides” whether to divide or exit the cell cycle. An exit results in growth arrest, differentiation, senescence or apoptosis. A decision to divide leads to a series of orderly processes starting with DNA synthesis (S), a second growth period (G2), mitosis and cell division (M), and a return to G1. As cells progress through the cell cycle, pRb undergoes a series of phosphorylation events. In G0 and early G1, pRb is primarily unphosphorylated. As cells approach the G1/S boundary, pRb becomes phosphorylated by cyclin D/CDK4 and cyclin D/CDK6 kinases as seen by a higher-molecular-weight species of pRb. Further phosphorylation by cyclin E/CDK2 kinase occurs in late G1. Phosphorylation is progressive and continuous throughout the S phase and into G2/M. Phosphopeptide analysis demonstrated that pRb is phosphorylated on more than a dozen distinct serine or threonine residues throughout the cell cycle (Sellers 1997[58]).

Let un-pRb denote the unphosphorylated form of pRb, hypo-pRb, the hypo or under phosphorylated form of pRb and hyper-pRb, the hyperphosphorylated form of pRb. Un/hypo-pRb denotes the set of all pRb either un or hypophosphorylated.

Accumulation of un/hypo-pRb leads to G1 arrest. This hypothesis is supported by many observations. For instance, E2F is a transcription factor associated with cell proliferation. Un/hypo-, but not hyper-pRb, binds and inactivates E2F. The cellular introduction of viral oncogenes such as HPV16 E7, adenovirus E1A, and simian virus 40 (SV40) large T antigen result in cell proliferation. These viral oncogenes bind un/hypo-, but not hyper-pRb and disable its suppressive capacity. The human osteogenic sarcoma cell line SAOS-2 lacks full length nuclear pRb protein. Transfection of the Rb gene in
these cells result in G0/G1 growth arrest. Co-transfection of cyclin D2, E or A resulted in pRb phosphorylation and a release from G0/G1 arrest (Dou 1998\textsuperscript{159})

\[
(2) \quad \text{Rb transcription increases in arrest and differentiation}
\]

The following studies show increased Rb transcription in arrested or differentiated cells.

\textit{(a) mRNA measurements}

Murine erythroleukemia (MEL) cells are virus-transformed erythroid precursor cells which can be induced to differentiate by a variety of chemicals. MEL cells were induced to differentiate with dimethyl sulfoxide (DMSO) or hexamethylene bisacetamide (HMBA). Expression of globin was used as a marker of differentiation. The cells showed a 11- and 7-fold increase in Rb mRNA following DMSO and HMBA treatment, respectively, with maximum expression on day three of induction (Coppola 1990\textsuperscript{160}, Fig 1). This increase preceded the accumulation of globin mRNA, the marker of differentiation. The peak in Rb mRNA occurred simultaneously with growth arrest and terminal differentiation. Another cell line, S2 myoblasts derived from C3H10T1/2 mouse embryonic by 5-azacytidine treatment, was induced to differentiate by depletion of mitogens from the medium. Expression of $\alpha$-actin, a muscle specific gene, was used as a marker of differentiation. Seven to twelve hours following feeding with 2% horse serum (low mitogen conditions), the cells showed an increase in pRb mRNA. The increase continued over the next 48 hours (Ibid, Fig 2). The study estimates a 10-fold Rb mRNA induction, an increase which was accompanied by an increase in $\alpha$-actin expression. In a B cell line, A20 and a pre-B cell line 300-18, the Rb gene is expressed at very low levels compared to actin. In three plasmacytoma lines, representing very late stages of B cell differentiation, Rb mRNA was 8-fold higher. These results are consistent with those of MEL and S2 cells. All cell lines showed an increase in steady-state Rb mRNA in late stages of differentiation, which is maintained in dividing cells. Based on these observations, Coppola, \textit{et al.}, concluded that in all three lineages (erythroid, muscle, and B-cell) differentiation is associated with increased Rb mRNA.
An enriched epithelial cell population from 20-day fetal rat lungs was immortalized with a replication-defective retrovirus encoding a temperature-sensitive SV40 T antigen (T Ag). One cell line, designated 20-3, maintained a tight epithelial-like morphology. At the permissive temperature (33°C), 20-3 cells grow with a doubling time of 21 h. At the non-permissive temperature (40°C), doubling time increased to more than 80 h (Levine 1998\textsuperscript{161}, Fig 4a). 20-3 cells, incubated at the permissive temperature (33°C) show almost no Rb mRNA while at the non-permissive temperature (40°C) the cells show a more than 100-fold increase in Rb mRNA (Ibid, Fig 6b). The increase is significant at 24 h after temperature shift-up and peaks at 48-72 h (Ibid, Fig 7a). Terminally differentiated and growth arrested alveolar type 1 cells are first observed at day 20-21 of gestation. Prior to this time the lung shows active growth and cell proliferation. Total RNA was isolated from 17- and 21-day fetal lungs and assayed for Rb mRNA. The results show a 2.5-fold increase in Rb mRNA during this period relative to control gene EFTu.

P19 embryonal carcinoma cells were induced to differentiate into neuroectoderm with retinoic acid (RA). Undifferentiated cells show very low levels of Rb mRNA and protein. Twenty four hours following RA exposure, the cells showed a marked increase in Rb expression with mRNA levels increasing 15-fold by 4-6 days (Slack 1993\textsuperscript{162}, Fig 2). RAC65 is a mutant clone of P19 cells that fails to differentiate. The cells contain a truncated RAR\textalpha receptor. Following RA exposure, the cells showed no increase in Rb mRNA (Ibid, Fig 3). P19 cells transfected with RB-CAT, a reporter gene driven by the Rb promoter, expressed CAT with kinetics similar to the Rb gene (Ibid, Fig 5b, 6). The post-mitotic neurons developed in RA-treated cultures contained only the hypophosphorylated form of pRb (Ibid, Fig 7, 8). Based on these observations, Slack, et al., concluded that the increased Rb expression associated with cell differentiation appears to result from enhanced transcription.

DS19/Sc9 is a MEL cell line which when treated with in G1, prolonged the next G1 (Richon 1992\textsuperscript{163}, Fig 2A). The cells which emerged from the prolonged G1, progressed through cell cycle for at least another two to five generations (cycle time of 10 to 12 h), and permanently arrested in G1/G0 expressing characteristic of terminal erythroid differentiation. Over 90% of the DS19/Sc9 cells became irreversibly committed to differentiate by 48 h of culture with HMBA. Protein extracts prepared from asynchronous
cultures induced with HMBA demonstrated a 2-to 3-fold increase in total amount of pRb. There was no change in proportions of hypo- or hyper-pRb (Ibid, Fig 4A). An increase in the level of total pRb was detected as early as 24 h after onset of culture with HMBA, and pRb increased as the number of cells recruited to terminal differentiation increased through 100 h of cultured (Ibid, Fig. 4A). HMBA-induced an increase in pRb in all phases of the cell cycle while no change in pRb protein level was detected in DS19/Sc9 cultured without HMBA. The increase in pRb in cells cultured with HMBA was accompanied by an increase in the level of Rb mRNA. A 3.6-fold increase in Rb transcription was observed with no change in mRNA stability. DS19/VCR-C is a vincristine-resistant variant of the parental DS19/Sc9 with an accelerated rate of differentiation. HMBA treatment of DS19/VCR-C showed a more prolonged G1 arrest and a higher percentage of cell committed to terminal differentiation compared to DS19/Sc9. During G1 arrest, DS19/VCR-C also showed more hypo-pRb compared to DS19/Sc9. In HMBA-induced MEL cells, every cell division increased the absolute amount of pRb protein, whereas the degree of phosphorylation continues to fluctuate through cell cycle progression. This increase was accompanied by an increase in mRNA resulting from an increased rate of transcription. Based on these observations, Richon, et al., proposes the following model. An inducer increases Rb transcription resulting in higher hypo- and total-pRb concentration. The increase in hypo-pRb prolongs G1 however, the initial increase in hypo-pRb is most likely not sufficient for permanent G1 arrest. Therefore, cells reenter the cell cycle for a few more generations. While cells continue to divide, the increased rate of transcription results in hypo-pRb accumulation. When a critical hypo-pRb concentration is reached, the cells irreversibly commit to terminal differentiation. This model describes the determination of the commitment to differentiate as a stochastic process with progressive increases in the probability of G1/G0 arrest and differentiation established through successive cell divisions.

Many studies report a relationship between Rb phosphorylation, cell cycle arrest and differentiation. These studies use the different gel mobility of hyper-pRb relative to un/hypo-pRb to show protein phosphorylation or dephosphorylation. Since these studies are interested in the transition between the two states, they do not report changes in total concentration of each form of pRb. Specifically, they do not quantify protein levels with densitometry. However, in some cases, visual inspection of the blots can provide valuable
information. Consider the following study. Actively growing LS174T colon cancer cells, which constitutively express pRb, were induced to differentiate with sodium butyrate. Three days following exposure, a lower molecular weight, or unphosphorylated pRb molecule became visible. After the fourth day of treatment, when significant growth inhibition was observed, the unphosphorylated species were predominant (Schwartz 1998, Fig 5). A careful inspection of the blots in Fig 5 suggests that the concentration of hypo-pRb at day 4 (lane 6) is higher than the initial concentration of hyper-pRb (lane 1 and 2). Even if we assume that dephosphorylation of hyper-pRb produces a hypo-pRb species associated with growth arrest (and not protein degradation), the differences in total concentration at day 0 and day 4 indicate a potential need for increased transcription (an increase in mRNA stability, or rate of translation is also possible).

**Summary:** The transcription of the Rb gene increases with growth arrest and differentiation.

(3) Microcompetition increases probability of developing cancer

Rb is a GABP stimulated gene. Microcompetition decreases Rb transcription which in turn increases the probability of developing cancer.

**b) BRCA1**

(1) **BRCA1 and cell proliferation**

Transcriptional or translational inactivation of the BRCA1 gene increases cell proliferation.

Normal mammary epithelial cells and MCF-7 breast cancer cells were treated with unmodified 18 base deoxyribonucleotides complementary to the BRCA1 translational initiation site. The anti-BRCA1 oligonucleotides decreased BRCA1 mRNA by 70-90% compared to control oligonucleotides (Thompson 1995, Fig 6) and the anti-BRCA1 treated cells showed accelerated proliferation rate (Ibid, Fig 4a,c).

NIH3T3 cells were transfected with a vector expressing BRCA1 antisense RNA resulting in reduced expression of endogenous BRCA1 protein. The transfected cells,
unlike parental and sense transfectants, showed accelerated growth rate, anchorage independent growth and tumorigenicity in nude mice (Rao 1996\textsuperscript{166}, Fig 4).

Retroviral transfer of wild-type BRCA1 gene to breast and ovarian cancer cell lines inhibited growth \textit{in vitro}. Transfection of wild-type BRCA1 also inhibited development of MCF-7 tumors in nude mice. Peritoneal treatment with retroviral vector expressing wild-type BRCA1 inhibited tumor growth and increased survival among mice with established MCF-7 tumors (Hold 1996\textsuperscript{167}). A phase I clinical study employing gene transfer of BRCA1 into 12 patients with extensive metastatic cancer showed stable disease for 4-16 weeks in eight patients, tumor reduction in three patients and radiographic shrinkage of measurable disease in one patient (Tait 1997\textsuperscript{168}).

Reduced expression of BRCA1 resulted in increased cell proliferation while increased expression of BRCA1 resulted in reduced tumor development.

(2) BRCA1 in cancer

(a) Germline mutations

The majority of familial breast cancer and ovarian cancer cases result from germline mutations in the BRCA1 gene.

(b) Sporadic breast cancer

Many studies showed decreased BRCA1 transcription in sporadic breast tumors (Russel 2000\textsuperscript{169}, Rio 1999\textsuperscript{170}, Rice 1998\textsuperscript{171}, Magdinier 1998\textsuperscript{172}, Ozcelik 1998\textsuperscript{173}, Thompson 1995\textsuperscript{174}). The decrease intensifies with tumor progression yet the cause of the decreased transcription is unknown. Two possible causes, somatic mutations and promoter methylation, do not seem to provide an explanation. Somatic mutations of the BRCA1 gene are rare in sporadic breast and ovarian tumors (Russel 2000\textsuperscript{175}, Rio 1999\textsuperscript{176}, Futreal 1994\textsuperscript{177}, Merajver 1995\textsuperscript{178}), and methylation of the BRCA1 promoter was demonstrated in only a small percentage of sporadic breast cancer samples (Catteau 1999\textsuperscript{179}, Magdinier 1998\textsuperscript{180}, Rice 1998\textsuperscript{181}, Dobrovic 1997\textsuperscript{182}). The majority of breast and ovarian tumors show neither somatic mutations nor promoter methylation.
Microcompetition increases probability of developing cancer
BRCA1 is a GABP stimulated gene. Microcompetition decreases BRCA1 transcription which increases the probability of developing breast and ovarian cancer.

c) Fas

(1) Fas and cancer
Cell population density is determined by balancing between cell growth and cell death. Programmed cell death, or apoptosis, is the final step in a series of morphological and biochemical events. Fas antigen is a 48-kDA cell surface receptor homologous to the tumor necrosis factor (TNF) family of transmembrane proteins. Fas binding by the Fas ligand, or by antibodies, triggers rapid cell apoptosis.

Fas induced apoptosis was initially identified in the immune system. Ligation of Fas induced apoptosis in activated T cells, B cells, and natural killer cells. In addition, Fas was identified in many epithelial cells. Although the role of Fas in non-lymphoid tissues is not completely understood, maintenance of normal cell turnover and removal of potentially oncogenic cells have been suggested. Consider, as example, the epithelial layer of colonic mucosa. These cells show a rapid rate of cell turnover and high expression of Fas. It is conceivable that the high rate of colonocyte removal is Fas induced.

(a) Germline mutations
Germline mutations in Fas gene is associated with spontaneous development of plasmacytoid tumors in lpr mice (Davidson 1998183) and neoplasms in two autoimmune lymphoproliferative syndrome (ALPS) patients (Drappa 1996184).

(b) Sporadic cancers
Many studies showed progressive reduction in Fas expression in many cancers. Consider, Keane, et al., (1996185) results in breast carcinomas, Gratas, et al., (1998186) results in esophageal carcinomas, Strand, et al., (1996187) results in hepatocellular carcinomas, Moller, et al., (1994188) results in colon carcinomas and Leithauser, et al., (1993189) results in lung carcinomas. The reduced Fas expression results from reduced
transcription of the Fas gene. Consider the observations in Das, et al., (2000\textsuperscript{190}) showing reduced Fas transcription in ovarian, cervical and endometrial carcinoma tissues and four ovarian and three cervical carcinoma cell lines. Also consider the results in Butler, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{191}) demonstrating reduced Fas transcription in colon tumors, and in Keane, et al., (1996\textsuperscript{192}) showing reduced Fas mRNA levels in six out of seven breast cancer cell lines. As in the case of the BRCA1 gene, the cause of decreased transcription is unknown. The same two possible causes, somatic mutations and promoter methylation, also fail to explain the observed reduction in Fas transcription. Allelic loss or somatic mutations of the Fas gene are rare (Bertoni 2000\textsuperscript{193}, Lee 1999A\textsuperscript{194}, Lee 1999B\textsuperscript{195}, Shin 1999\textsuperscript{196}, Butler 1998\textsuperscript{197}), and no methylation was found in the Fas promoter (Butler 2000\textsuperscript{198}). The majority of carcinomas show no somatic mutations or promoter methylation in the Fas gene.

(2) Microcompetition increased probability of developing cancer

Fas is a GABP stimulated gene. Microcompetition decreases Fas transcription leading to an increased probability of developing cancer.

3. Signaling

\textit{a) ERK agents inhibit proliferation, stimulate differentiation}

ERK agents phosphorylate GABP, increase Rb, BRAC1 and Fas transcription and induce cell cycle arrest and differentiation.

(1) Constitutive active MAP kinase kinase 1 (MEK1)

AU565 breast carcinoma cells were transiently transfected with a constitutively active MEK1 mutant or a control vector. Expression of the constitutively active MEK1 resulted in a significant increase in ERK activity as determined by the use of an antibody against phosphorylated ERK (Lessor 1998\textsuperscript{199}, Fig. 6A, B). Oil Red O staining was used as a measure of cell differentiation. 53.6% of cells transfected with the constitutively activated MEK1 vector were Oil Red O positive. In contrast, only 20.8% of the cells transfected with the control vector were positive. Based on these observations, Lessor, et
al., concluded that constitutive activation of the MEK/ERK pathway in AU565 cells is sufficient to mediate differentiation.

(2)  Heregulinβ1 (HRGβ1)

AU565 breast carcinoma cells were treated with 10 ng/ml HRGβ1 for 7 days. The treatment increased ERK activity 4-fold after 10 min. The initial increase dropped to control levels by 15 min. Following the drop, a second sustained increase in activity was observed for 105 min (Lessor 1998200, Fig 1). HRGβ1 treatment decreased cell number by 56% as compared to non treated controls (Ibid, Fig 4). Addition of 0-10 μM PD98059, a specific MEK inhibitor (see above) resulted in a dose-dependent reversal of HRGβ1-induced cell growth arrest (Ibid, Fig 4). Pretreatment with PD98059 also inhibited HRGβ1-induced differentiation in a dose-dependent manner (Ibid, Fig 5), with 10 μM PD98059 completely blocking the HRGβ1-induced differentiation. Based on these observations Lessor, et al., concluded that sustained3 activation of the MEK/ERK pathway is both essential and sufficient for HRGβ1-induced differentiation of AU565 cells.

(3)  Phorbol ester (TPA)

ML-1, human myeloblastic leukemic cells, were treated with 0.3 ng/ml TPA. As a result, ERK2 activity increased with a 6- and 4-fold induction at 1 and 3 h, respectively. Thereafter, the activity decreased to below basal levels (He 1999201, Fig 1A). The time-dependent ERK2 activation was further illustrated by a shift to a slower-migrating form of ERK2, representing the phosphorylated ERK2 (Ibid, Fig 1B). ML-1 cells treated with 0.3 ng/ml TPA for 3 days, followed by additional 3 days in culture after removal of TPA, ceased to proliferate and displayed morphological features typical of monocyes/macrophages (Ibid, Fig. 6c). Exposure to PD98059, the MEK inhibitor, led to a 2- and 10-fold reduction in TPA-activated ERK2 activity at 1 and 3 h, respectively (Ibid, Fig 3). Cells treated simultaneously with 10 μM PD98059 and 0.3 ng/ml TPA continued to proliferate and exhibited morphology of undifferentiated cells (Ibid, Fig 6A, D). Based

---

3 Exposure to low doses of HRGβ1 (0.01 ng/ml) induced a 7-fold transient 5 min peak in ERK activation which dropped to control levels by 90 min. This dose showed no sustained activation (Ibid, Fig 1). The 0.01 ng/ml HRGβ1 treatment results in cell proliferation.
on these observations, He, et al., concluded that activation of the MEK/ERK signaling pathway is necessary for TPA-induced mononuclear cell differentiation.

(4) Transforming growth factor-β1 (TGFβ1)

An enriched epithelial cell population from 20-day fetal rat lungs was immortalized with a replication-defective retrovirus encoding a temperature-sensitive SV40 T antigen (T Ag). One cell line, designated 20-3, maintained a tight epithelial-like morphology. At the permissive temperature (33°C), 20-3 cells grow with a doubling time of 21 h. At the non-permissive temperature (40°C) doubling time increased to more than 80 h (Levine 1998202, Fig 4a). The labeling index is a function of [3H]thymidine incorporation in DNA, and therefore correlates with cell replication. Treatment of 20-3 cells with 5 ng/ml TGFβ1 for 72 h decreased the labeling index to 80% at the permissive temperature (33°C) and to less than 5% at the non-permissive temperature (40°C) (Ibid, Fig 5c). Treated cells cultured at the non-permissive temperature for 72 h and then shifted to the permissive temperature for additional 24 h showed an index below 10%. The low labeling index reveals that extensive terminal growth arrest occurred during the non-permissive temperature period. Treatment with the ERK agent TGFβ1 resulted in reduced replication of the epithelial cells in both permissive and non-permissive temperatures.

4. Carcinogens

a) Oxidative stress increases the probability of developing cancer

Oxidative stress decreases binding of GABP to the N-box, reduces transcription of GABP stimulated genes, and increases transcription of GABP suppressed genes (see microcompetition chapter above). Microcompetition for GABP also decreases binding of GABP to the N-box, which increases the probability of developing cancer (see above). Therefore, oxidative stress also increases the probability of developing cancer. Moreover, oxidative stress increases replication of some GABP viruses, see, for instance, the stimulating effect of oxidative stress on cytomegalovirus (CMV) (Vossen 1997203, Scholz 1996204), Ebstein-Barr virus (EBV) (Ranjan 1998205, Nakamura 1999206), and HIV (Allard 1998A207, Allard 1998B208). If the cell harbors such a GABP virus, the probability of developing cancer as a result of oxidative stress is even higher.
b) **Carcinogens induce oxidative stress**

Many carcinogens, genetic and epigenetic, induce oxidative stress, see, for instance, nicotine (Helen 2000\textsuperscript{209}, Yildiz 1999\textsuperscript{210}, Yildiz 1998\textsuperscript{211}) and asbestos (Afaq 2000\textsuperscript{212}, Abidi 1999\textsuperscript{213}, Liu 2000\textsuperscript{214}, Marczynski 2000\textsuperscript{A215}, Marczynski 2000\textsuperscript{B216}, Fisher 2000\textsuperscript{217}, Brown 2000\textsuperscript{218}). By increasing oxidative stress, these carcinogens reduce GABP binding, decrease expression of Rb, fas and BRCA1, and increase the probability of developing cancer. The effect of these carcinogens on GABP binding might be the main reason for their carcinogenic capacity.

5. **Viruses in cancer**

Many studies report detection of viral genomes in human tumors. The following table summerizes some of these reports.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Virus</th>
<th>Cancer</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Epstein-Bar virus (EBV)</td>
<td>Burkitt's lymphoma (BL)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nasopharyngeal carcinoma (NPC)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hodgkin's disease</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Some T-cell lymphomas</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Polymorphic B cell lymphomas</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B-cell lymphoproliferation in immunosuppressed individuals</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breast cancer</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SV40</td>
<td>Brain tumors</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Osteosarcomas</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mesotheliomas</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HIV</td>
<td>Breast cancer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human T cell lymphotrophic virus - I (HTLV-I)</td>
<td>Adult T-cell leukemia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human papilloma virus (HPV)</td>
<td>Anogenital cancers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Skin cancers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Oral cancers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hepatitis B virus (HBV)</td>
<td>Hepatocellular carcinoma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hepatitis C virus (HCV)</td>
<td>Hepatocellular carcinoma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human herpes virus 8 (HHV8, KSHV)</td>
<td>Kaposi's sarcoma,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Body cavity lymphoma</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
See also recent reviews on human tumor viruses, Butel 2000\textsuperscript{219}, zur Hausen 1999\textsuperscript{220}, Hoppe-Seyler 1999\textsuperscript{221}. On EBV and breast cancer see Bonnet 1999\textsuperscript{222}, Labrecque 1995\textsuperscript{223}, and the editorial by Magrath and Bhatia 1999\textsuperscript{224}. On HIV and breast cancer see Rakowicz-Szulczynska 1998\textsuperscript{225}.

EBV, SV40, HIV and HTLV-I are GABP viruses. Microcompetition between a GABP virus and cellular genes causes cancer. An interesting aspect of microcompetition is its ability to explain how viral infection can cause cancer independent of proto-oncogene expression or viral integration into host DNA.

B. Atherosclerosis

1. Motility

a) Introduction

b) ECM-cell and cell-cell adhesion

The extracellular matrix (ECM) is comprised of several proteins, including collagens, fibronectin, laminins and proteoglycans assembled into a network structure. Cells bind to ECM proteins through transmembrane-surface receptors. The receptors include integrins, cadherins, immunoglobulins, selectins and proteoglycans. The cadherins and selectins are mostly involved in cell-cell adhesion. The integrins and proteoglycans are mostly involved in cell-ECM binding. Cell-adhesion molecules connect external ligands and the cytoskeleton and participate in signal-transduction.

c) Motility

A cell is said to show motility if it changes position over time. A change of position of the entire cell is called migration. A change in position of any part of the cell periphery is called projection. The two processes share common features, such as polarization, cytoskeletal reorganization and formation of new cell-ECM adhesion points.
d) **Morphology**

The first phase in cell migration is polarization. During polarization the cell creates clear “front-back” asymmetry in which actin and cell-surface receptors accumulate at the leading edge of the cell. The second phase of migration is protrusion of the plasma membrane from the front of the cell in the form of fine, tubular structures called filapodia, or a broad, flat membrane sheet called lamellipodium. The third phase is establishing new ECM-cell points of contact. This binding prevents retraction of the newly extended membrane and provides “grip” for the tractional force required for cell movement. The two final stages of cell migration are flux of intracellular organelles into the newly extended sections of the cell, and retraction of, or breaking off, the trailing edge. The result of this process is directional movement of the cell body (Sanserson 1990).²²

**e) Direction**

A simple characterization of direction of movement is a change in distance relative to a reference point in space. Let circulating blood define such a reference point. Movement of cells out, or away from circulation, will be called forward motility. Diapedesis of monocytes to enter the intima (also called migration, emigration or transmigration) is an example of forward motility. Movement of macrophages deeper into the intima is another example of forward motility. Movement of cells toward, or into circulation, will be called backward motility. Reverse transendothelial migration is an example of backward motility.

2. **P-selectin-, β₂ integrin-, α₄-integrin-propelled forward motility**

The first section discusses the relationship between p-selectin, β₂ integrin and α₄-integrin and motility without reference to direction. The direction issue is covered in the second section.

**a) Motility**

(1) Transendothelial migration

Leukocyte migration from blood into tissue starts with crossing the endothelium. This phase is called transendothelial migration, transmigration or emigration.
Transmigration involves multiple steps, including rolling of leukocytes along the endothelium, firm adhesion of leukocytes to endothelium called margination, and movement of leukocytes through endothelial intercellular junctions. In this process P-selectin mediates rolling of leukocytes on the endothelium (Dore 1993\textsuperscript{227}). An increase in endothelial surface expression of P-selectin increases leukocyte rolling and transmigration.

Many studies demonstrated the role of the surface receptors CD18 (CD11a/CD18, CD11b/CD18, CD11c/CD18) and VLA-4 ($\alpha_4\beta_1$, CD49d/CD29) in this process of transendothelial migration (Shang 1998A\textsuperscript{228}, Shang 1998B\textsuperscript{229}, Meerschaert 1995\textsuperscript{230}, Meerschaert 1994\textsuperscript{231}, Chuluyan 1993\textsuperscript{232}, Kavanaugh 1991\textsuperscript{233}). The two studies by Shang, \textit{et al.}, (1998A, 1998B) also showed that these molecules participate in forward motility through a barrier of human synovial fibroblasts (HSF).

\begin{itemize}
\item[(2)] \textbf{Intimal motility}
\end{itemize}

CD18 and $\alpha_4$ also participate in motility inside the intima. Consider the following studies.

To test the effect of $\alpha_4$ expression on cell motility, $\alpha_4$ was expressed in a Chinese hamster ovary (CHO) cell line deficient in $\alpha_5\beta_1$ integrin (CHO B2). The parental $\alpha_5$ deficient CHO B2 cells were unable to adhere, spread or migrate on a surface coated with 10 $\mu$g/ml mouse cellular fibronectin. Expression of $\alpha_4\beta_1$ integrin in the CHO B2 cells enabled the cells to adhere, spread and migrate on the fibronectin coated surface (Wu 1995\textsuperscript{234}).

To test the effect of CD18 on cell motility, neutrophils were stimulated with 0.5\times10\textsuperscript{-8} M fMLP. The stimulation increased random motility through a three-dimensional collagen type I gel (0.1 to 1.0 mg/mL). In a 0.4 mg/mL collagen gel, antibodies against CD18 (anti-CD18) decreased motility of stimulated neutrophils by 70% (Saltzman 1999\textsuperscript{235}). Based on these observations Saltzman, \textit{et al.}, concluded that under conditions of high hydration, or when fiber density is relatively low, neutrophil migration through collagen gels is CD18-dependent.

To test the effect of CD18 on cell motility, another study stimulated neutrophils with 10\textsuperscript{-8} M fMLP for 10 min. On unstimulated cells, CD18 was randomly distributed on
the nonvillus planar cell body. Stimulation of the round, smooth neutrophils induced a
front-tail polarity, i.e., a ruffled frontal pole and contracted rear pole with a distinct tail
knob at the posterior pole. Moreover, immunogold-labeling and backscattered electron
images detected a 4-fold increase in CD18 surface membrane concentration compared to
unstimulated cells. The immunogold-labeled CD18 accumulated mainly on ruffled plasma
membrane at the frontal pole of polar neutrophils. The contracted rear end showed few
colloidal gold particles (Fernandez-Segura 1996\textsuperscript{236}). Based on these observations,
Fernandez-Segura, \textit{et al.}, concluded that CD18 may participate in the locomotion of
neutrophils.

A third study stimulated rat mesentery with platelet-activating factor (PAF; $10^{-7}$
M). After 30-40 min of the chemotactic stimulation, numerous polymorphonuclear
leukocytes (PMNs), predominantly neutrophils and monocytes/macrophages, were
observed migrating further into the extravascular tissue. Immunofluorescence flow
cytometry revealed a 3-fold increase in CD18 expression on extravasated PMNs compared
with blood PMNs. Intravital time-lapse videomicroscopy was used to analyze migration
velocity of activated PMNs. Median migration velocity in response to PAF stimulation
was $15.5 \pm 4.5 \mu m/min$ (mean $\pm$ SD). Treatment with two different antibodies against
CD18 significantly reduced migration velocity by 17\% (mAb CL26) and 22\% (mAb
WT.3) (Werr 1998\textsuperscript{237}). Based on these \textit{in vivo} observations Werr, \textit{et al.}, concluded that
CD18 participates in extravascular PMN locomotion.

Since the extracellular matrix (ECM) contains fibronectin and collagen, the
observations of Wu (1995\textsuperscript{238}) and Saltzman (1999\textsuperscript{239}) above are consistent with intimal $\alpha_4$
inTEGRIN- and CD18-propelled leukocyte motility. Moreover, the morphological changes
reported by Fernandez-Segura (1996) and the extravascular CD18-propelled leukocyte
motility reported by Werr (1998) support such a mechanism.

\textbf{b) Direction}

The first segment of leukocyte forward motility, transendothelial transmigration, is
$\alpha_4$ INTEGRIN- and CD18-propelled. From the basal side of the endothelium, leukocytes
continue their forward motility into the intima until they reach a certain depth. Werr, \textit{et
al.}, (1998) showed that forward motility in the extravascular space is CD18-propelled.
Since the intima is sandwiched between the endothelium and the extravascular space, forward motility in the intimal segment is, most likely, CD18-propelled.

(See more on direction control, or "cell turning," below)

3. **TF-propelled backward motility**

As above, the first section discussed the relation between TF and motility without reference to direction. The direction is covered in the second section.

a) **Motility**

TF expression induces cell spreading. Consider the following studies.

The human breast cancer cell line MCF-7 constitutively expresses TF on the cell surface. aMCF-7 is a subline of MCF-7. Muller, et al., (1999\(^{240}\)) show that adhesion of aMCF-7 cells to surfaces coated with FVIIa or inactivated FVIIa (DEGR-FVIIa) was significantly accelerated during the first 2 h after seeding compared to surfaces coated with BSA. In addition, the number of cells adhering to anti-TF IgG was significantly higher than the number of cells adhering to anti-FVII or a control IgG (Ibid, Fig. 6A).

Accelerated adhesion and spreading of cells on surfaces coated with anti-TF mAb VIC7 was blocked by recombinant TF variants (sTF\(_{1-219}\), sTF\(_{97-219}\)) covering the epitope of anti-TF mAb VIC7 (residues 181-214). No effect was seen with sTF\(_{1-122}\). However, if anti-TF IIID8 (epitope area 1-25) was used for coating, sTF\(_{1-122}\) blocked accelerated adhesion and spreading of cells. To conclude, the Muller, et al., results demonstrate that in vitro-cultured cells, that constitutively express TF on the cell surface, adhere and spread on surfaces coated with both catalytically active and inactive immobilized ligands for TF. Ott, et al., (1998\(^{241}\)) showed that J82 bladder carcinoma cells that constitutively express high levels of TF adhere and spread on surfaces coated with monoclonal antibodies specific for the extracellular domain of TF. The spontaneously transformed endothelial cell line ECV304 or human HUVEC-C endothelial cells also adhered and spread on TF ligand when stimulated with TNF\(\alpha\) to induce TF expression.

In malignant and nonmalignant spreading epithelial cells, TF is localized at the cell surface in close proximity to, or in association with, both actin and actin-binding proteins.
in lamellipodes and microspikes, at ruffled membrane areas and at leading edges. Cellular TF expression at highly dynamic membrane areas suggest an association between TF and elements of the cytoskeleton (Muller 1999245). Cunningham, et al., (1992243) showed that cells deficient in actin binding protein 280 (ABP-280) have impaired cell motility. Transfection of ABP-280 into these cells restored translocational motility. Ott, et al., (1998244) identified ABP-280 as a ligand for the TF cytoplasmic domain and showed that ligation of the TF extracellular domain by either FVIIa or anti-TF resulted in ligation of the TF cytoplasmic domain by ABP-280, reorganization of the subcortical actin network, and expression of specific adhesion contacts different from integrin mediated focal adhesions.

b) **Direction**

(1) Reverse transendothelial migration.

Randolph, et al., (1998245) used an *in vitro* model consisting of HUVEC grown on reconstituted bovine type I collagen. The reverse transmigration assays used freshly isolated or precultured peripheral blood monocellular cells (PBMC) incubated with endothelium for 1 or 2 hours to allow accumulation of monocytes in the subendothelial collagen. Following initial incubation, the nonmigrated cells were removed by rinsing the cultures. At given intervals a few cultures were processed to enable counting of the cells underneath the endothelium. The remaining cultures were rinsed to remove cells that may have accumulated in the apical compartment by reverse transmigration, and incubation was continued. Let percent reverse transmigration represent the percentage decrease in the number of cells beneath the endothelium relative to the number of subendothelial cells at 2 hours. Figure 17 shows the percent reverse transmigration as a function of time.

The results showed that mononuclear phagocytes (MP) that enter the subendothelial collagen later exit the cultures by retransversing the endothelium with a t1/2 of 48 hours. The endothelial monolayer remained intact throughout the experiments.

(2) Role of tissue factor in reverse transendothelial migration

Two MoAbs against TF, VIC7 and HTF-K108, strongly inhibited reverse transmigration for at least 48 hours (Ibid, Fig. 2A). In comparison, 55 other isotype-
matched MoAbs tested had little or no effect, specifically, anti-factor VIIa, -IVE4 or -IIH2 did not inhibit reverse transmigration (Ibid, Fig. 2C). A direct comparison of the effect of VIC7 relative to IB4, a MoAb against β2 integrin, revealed 78 ± 15% inhibition of reverse transendothelial migration by VIC7 relative to no inhibition by IB4 in the same three experiments (Ibid, Fig. 2B). None of the MoAbs affected the total number of live cells in the cultures.

(3) TF amino acids 181-214 essential for reverse transmigration

Studies of epitope mapping showed that the epitope for VIC7 included recognition of at least some amino acids between residues 181-214. Soluble TF inhibited reverse transmigration by 69 ± 2% in eight independent experiments (Ibid, Fig. 4). Only fragments containing amino acid residues carboxyl to residue 202 blocked reverse transmigration effectively (Ibid, Fig. 4). This result agrees well with the location of the epitope for VIC7.

(4) TF and endothelium adhesion

Experiments were conducted to explore the existence of a ligand to TF on the endothelium. Unstimulated HUVEC were added to wells coated with TF or control proteins in the presence or absence of anti-TF MoAb. After 2 hours incubation, endothelial cell adhesion to TF fragments containing amino acid residues 202-219 was greater than their binding to control surfaces or to TF fragments lacking these residues (Ibid, Fig. 8A). Spreading of HUVEC during the first 2 hours was observed on surfaces coated with TF fragments carrying residues 97-219 or 1-219. Surfaces coated with a TF fragment spanning amino acids 1-122 showed much less spreading. These results show that endothelial cells express binding sites for TF, and that the TF residues 202-219 participate in this adhesion.

(5) Reverse transmigration and TF self association

LPS stimulation increases cell surface TF activity through increased concentration of cell surface TF molecules and increased conversion of TF dimers to monomers. Monocytes and HUVEC were stimulated with LPS. VIC7 recognized a single band of 47 kD in the LPS-stimulated cells, but not in the unstimulated cell extracts (Ibid, Fig. 3). In
unstimulated cells TF is self-associated, most likely in the 181-219 region, and, therefore, unavailable for VIC7 binding. LPS stimulation converts the dimers to monomers and exposes the VIC7 binding site. The same region participates in binding to endothelial cells. Since VIC7 inhibits reverse transmigration by competitive binding to the 181-219 region, self-association also inhibits reverse transmigration.

4. Cell turning

Let CD18, $\alpha_4$ integrin and TF be called propulsion genes. Since leukocyte forward motility is $\alpha_4$ integrin- and CD18-propelled, and backward motility is TF-propelled, a signaling system should exist that coordinates expression of the propulsion genes. This system should determine the direction of cell motility. The following sections describe such a system.

a) Two propulsion systems

Forward and backward motility are propelled through mostly different molecules. Antibodies against many molecules participating in forward motility do not inhibit reverse transmigration. Randolph, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{246}) tested a variety of MoAbs against a list of molecules known to mediate binding between leukocytes and endothelium during apical-to-basal transmigration. Even though MoAbs were shown to access subendothelial antigens, neutralizing MoAbs to E-selectin, vascular cell adhesion molecule-1 (VCAM-1), and platelet/endothelial cell adhesion molecule-1 (PECAM-1) showed no effect on reverse transmigration. Ott, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{247}) showed that a RGD peptide known to block several matrix-binding integrins does not abolish spreading on coagulation protease factor VIIa (Ibid, Fig. 2A).

On the other hand, antibodies against TF, which participates in backward motility, do not inhibit forward motility. Resting monocytes do not express TF, however LPS stimulates their expression of TF. Randolph, et al., (1998) showed that the TF MoAb VIC7 inhibits adhesion of LPS-stimulated, but not resting, monocytes to unstimulated or TNF-activated HUVEC by 35 $\pm$ 7%. However, VIC7 did not inhibit migration of LPS-stimulated monocytes already bound to the apical side of the endothelium. Since
circulating monocytes do not express TF, it is reasonable to conclude that TF does not participate in adhesion to the endothelium during forward motility (TF adhesion to the apical side of the endothelium is probably important in backward motility, see below). Since TF also does not participate in the subsequent steps in apical-to-basal transendothelial migration, TF has no role in forward motility.

Ott, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{248}) also noted that J82 cells spreading on TF ligand have a different morphology compared to cells adherent to fibronectin through integrins (Ibid, Figs. 2A and 2B), thereby suggesting a qualitative difference in the two adhesive events.

\textit{b) Signaling}

\begin{enumerate}
\item Extracellular effects on forward motility

Extracellular signal-regulated kinase (ERK) agents are extracellular molecules which transmit a signal resulting in the phosphorylation of ERK. See chapter on ERK for examples. ERK agents stimulate GABP•p300 binding. In leukocytes, this binding stimulates transcription of CD18 and α₄, which, in turn, stimulates forward motility. Moreover, the stimulated binding of GABP•p300 represses TF, and therefore, represses backward motility.

A molecules is regarded a chemoattractant if it stimulates leukocytes forward motility. Considering chemoattraction in the framework of propulsion yields an interesting insight. In leukocytes, chemoattraction is the result of ERK phosphorylation. In other words, if a molecule leads to the phosphorylation of ERK, it should show chemoattraction. fMLP is an example for such a molecule. fMLP is a syntactic compound found in bacterial products. Several studies demonstrated that fMLP binding to its receptor results in phosphorylation of ERK1 and ERK2 (Chang 1999\textsuperscript{249} in rat neutrophils, Yagisawa 1999\textsuperscript{250} in human monocytes, Coffer 1998\textsuperscript{251} in human neutrophils). As an ERK agent, fMLP should demonstrate chemoattraction. As expected, Yamada, \textit{et al.}, (1992\textsuperscript{252}) showed that fMLP is a chemoattractant for blood mononuclear cells.
Mildly oxidized LDL (also termed “minimally modified” LDL, and therefore denoted mmLDL) and oxidized LDL (oxLDL) are also ERK agents. Consider the following studies.

Rat vascular smooth muscle cells (VSMC) were exposed to 25 μg/ml of Cu^{42} - oxidized LDL (oxLDL). The results showed a rapid stimulation of both ERK1 and ERK2 with peak activity at 5 min and a return to near baseline by 60 min (Kusuhara 1997^{253}, Fig. 1). 25 μg/mL of minimally oxidized LDL (mmLDL) caused a smaller increase in ERK activity with a similar time course (Kusuhara et al., call this type of LDL “native LDL.” However, they propose that this type of LDL is actually minimally oxidized. Therefore, we call it mmLDL). The increase in ERK activity relative to 200 nmol/L PMA treatment, was 54.3% for oxLDL and 35.2% for mmLDL. Both oxLDL and mmLDL stimulated ERK activity in a concentration-dependent manner (Ibid, Fig. 3). Human monocytes showed minimal ERK stimulation by either oxLDL or mmLDL (Ibid, Fig. 7A). In contrast, human monocyte-derived macrophages cultured for 7 days showed significant ERK activity in response to oxLDL (Ibid, Fig. 7B) but no response to mmLDL (Ibid, Fig. 7B). Bovine aortic endothelial cells showed no response to either oxLDL or mmLDL (Ibid, Fig. 7C). Based on these observations Kusuhara, et al., concluded ERK activation is cell type dependent, degree of oxidation dependent, LDL receptor dependent and that the rapidity of the ERK response to LDL indicates that ERK activation is LDL internalization independent.


Both mmLDL and oxLDL are ERK agents, and therefore, chemoattractants. Quinn, et al., (1987^{258}) demonstrated that oxLDL is a chemoattractant when bound to macrophages in the subendothelial space. However, in contrast to stimulated macrophages, circulating monocytes are not chemoattracted by oxLDL binding. To chemoattract monocytes, oxLDL uses an indirect approach. Subendothelial oxLDL stimulates endothelial cells to produce monocytes chemoattractant (chemotactic) protein - 1 (MCP-1, also called RANTES) which is an ERK agent. MCP-1 is released into
circulation and binds monocytes. Monocyte bound MCP-1 stimulates CD18 and α₄ integrin, resulting in adhesion to endothelium and transmigration.

Another special example is bacterial LPS, a known chemoattractant which is an ERK agent. LPS is a direct chemoattractant when bound to its receptor (before internalization), and an indirect chemoattractant through stimulation of MCP-1 which is a strong ERK agent.

(2) Intracellular effects on forward and backward motility

(a) Redox regulation of GABP N-box binding

Oxidative stress decreases the binding of GABP to the N-box, reduces transcription of GABP stimulated genes and increases transcription of GABP suppressed genes. Consider the following study.

Mouse 3T3 cells were treated for 2 h with diethyl maleate (DEM), a glutathione (GSH)-depleting agent, in the presence or absence of N-acetylcysteine (NAC), an antioxidant and a precursor of GSH synthesis. Following treatment, the cells were harvested, and nuclear extracts were prepared in the absence of a reducing agent. GABP DNA binding activity was measured by EMSA analysis using oligonucleotide probes containing a single N-box (AGGAAG) or two tandem N-boxes (AGGAAGAGGAAG). Treatment of 3T3 cells with DEM resulted in a dramatic decrease in the formation of GABP heterodimer (GABPαGABPβ), (Martin 1996²⁵⁹, Fig. 2A, lane 2) and heterotetramer (GABPα₂GABPβ₂), (βδ, Ψγ, 2A, lane 6) complexes on the single and double N-box. Inhibition of GABP DNA binding activity by DEM treatment was prevented by simultaneous addition of NAC (Ibid, Fig. 2A, lanes 4 and 8). The reduction of GABP DNA binding activity was not due to loss of GABP protein since the amount of GABPα and GABPβ1 was unaffected by DEM or NAC treatment. Dithiothreitol (DTT) is an antioxidant. DTT treatment of nuclear extracts prepared from DEM-treated 3T3 cells restored GABP binding activity. Treatment of 3T3 nuclear extracts with 5 mM GSSG nearly abolished GABP DNA binding. Based on these observations Martin et al., concluded that GABP DNA binding activity is inhibited by oxidative stress, i.e. GSH depletion. The study also measured the effect of DEM treatment on the expression of
transiently transfected luciferase reporter constructs containing a TATA box with either an upstream double N-box or C/EBP binding site (Ibid, Fig. 4). DEM treatment had no effect on luciferase expression from C/EBP-TA-Luc after 6 or 8 h treatment (Ibid, Fig. 4). However, DEM treatment of cells transfected with double N-box-TATA-Luc, resulted in a 28% decrease in luciferase expression after 6 h and a 62% decrease after 8 h (Ibid, Fig. 4). Based on these results, Martin et al., concluded that glutathione depletion inhibits GABP DNA binding activity resulting in reduced expression of GABP-regulated genes.

Oxidative stress decreases GABP binding to the N-box, which in turn decreases transcription of a GABP stimulated gene and increases transcription of a GABP repressed gene.

Microcompetition for GABP also decreases binding of GABP to the N-box. Take a GABP gene sensitive to oxidative stress through GABP only\(^4\). The effect of microcompetition on the transcription of this gene is similar to the effect of oxidative stress. In other words, for this gene, microcompetition can be viewed as leading to “excess oxidative stress.”

\( b \) Redox regulation of propulsion genes

Oxidative stress reduces the binding of GABP\(\alpha\) to the N-box. Assume the propulsion genes, TF, CD18 and \(\alpha_4\) integrin, are responsive to oxidative stress exclusively through GABP. GABP stimulates CD18 and \(\alpha_4\) integrin transcription. Reduced binding of GABP\(\alpha\) to DNA decreased CD18 and \(\alpha_4\) integrin transcription resulting in diminished forward motility. On the other hand, GABP represses TF transcription, oxidative stress increases TF transcription, stimulating backward motility.

\( i \) oxLDL effect on TF transcription

oxLDL increases TF transcription. Consider the following studies.

\( ^4 \) Oxidative stress also modifies binding of other transcription factors, such as AP1, and NF-kB.
Exposure of human monocytic THP-1 cells for 10 hours to concentrations of up to 20 μmol/L Cu^{+2} had no effect on procoagulant activity. However, in the presence of 1 μmol/L 8-hydroxyquinoline, Cu^{+2} produced a dose dependent expression of procoagulant activity (Crutchley 1995^{260}, Table 1). The effect of Cu^{+2} was replicated with the copper transporting protein ceruloplasmin. Cu^{+2} is known to produce lipid peroxidation and free radical generation. Therefore, the study tested the possibility that the procoagulant activity resulted from oxidative stress. Several lipophilic antioxidants, including probucol (20 μmol/L), vitamin E (50 μmol/L), BHT (50 μmol/L), and a 21-aminosteroid antioxidant U74389G (20 μmol/L), inhibited the Cu^{+2} induced procoagulant activity (Ibid, Fig. 4). The increased procoagulant activity was due to TF. Cu^{+2} induced intracellular oxidative stress which increased TF transcription. The kinetics of the induction of Cu^{+2} was compared to LPS. Exposure to LPS or Cu^{+2} resulted in an increase TF mRNA levels. Relative to basal levels, LPS increased mRNA 2.5-fold after 2 hours of exposure, declining to basal levels by 6 hours. In contrast, at 2 hours, Cu^{+2} reduced mRNA levels to 50% followed by a 3.5-fold increase at 6 hours (see figure 18). The Cu^{+2} and LPS induced TF expression also differed in the response to antioxidants. While all four antioxidants inhibited Cu^{+2} induced TF expression, only vitamin E inhibited LPS induced expression.

The LPS effect on TF transcription is mostly mediated through the NF-κB site.

Crutchley, et al., (1995) results indicate that oxidative stress increased TF transcription through a different site. This conclusion is also supported by the negative effect of oxLDL on NF-κB binding to its site as demonstrated in human T-lymphocytes (Caspar 1999^{261}), Raw 264.7, a mouse macrophage cell line (Matsumura 1999^{262}), peritoneal macrophages (Hamilton 1998^{263}), macrophages (Schackelford 1995^{264}), and human monocyte derived macrophage (Ohlsson 1996^{265}). The results of these studies are consistent with reduced binding of GABP to the N-box in the (-363 to -343) region of the TF gene (see above).

Another study tested the effect of oxLDL on TF transcription. The binding of advanced glycation end products (AGE) with their receptor (RAGE) result in intracellular oxidative stress indicated by reduced glutathione (GSH) levels (Yan 1994^{265}). Monocytes incubated with AGE-albumin (AGE-alb) for 24 hours showed an increase in TF mRNA expression (Khechai 1997^{265}, Fig. 1B). Presence of the translational inhibitor
cycloheximide completely suppressed the AGE-alb induced TF mRNA accumulation (Ibid, Fig. 1B). The antioxidant N-Acetylcysteine (NAC) increases the levels GSH and NAC is easily transported into the cell. Incubation of cells with AGE-alb in the presence of 30 mmol/L NAC resulted in a concentration dependent inhibition of TF activity (Ibid, Fig. 2A) and TF antigen expression. Moreover, TF mRNA expression was almost completely suppressed (Ibid, Fig. 2C). Based on these results Khechai, et al., concluded that oxidative stress is responsible for TF gene expression.

Crutchley, et al., (1995\textsuperscript{268}) showed that although reduced oxidative stress decreases TF mRNA, the LPS induced increase in TF mRNA is insensitive to certain antioxidant. Brisseau, et al., (1995\textsuperscript{269}) showed a similar insensitivity of the LPS induced increase in TF mRNA to the antioxidant NAC. Since Khechai, et al., (1997) reported that NAC increases TF mRNA, the combined results of Brisseau, et al., (1995) and Khechai, et al., (1997) are also consistent with reduced GABP binding to the N-box in the (-363 to -343) region resulting from oxidative stress.

See also Ichikawa, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{270}) which reported similar results in human macrophage-like U937 cells treated with the oxidant AGE and the antioxidants catalase and probucol.

**oxLDL effect on TF antigen localization**

The induced TF is localized to regions important in cell motility. Consider the following studies.

Endotoxin treatment of human glioblastoma cells (U87MG) resulted in preferential localization of TF antigen in membrane ruffles and peripheral pseudopods. Most prominent TF staining was observed along thin cytoplasmic extensions at the periphery of the cells. Moreover, membrane blebs, associated with cell migration, were also heavily stained (Carson 1993\textsuperscript{271}). Endotoxin treatment of macrophages also resulted in a high concentration of TF antigen in membrane ruffles and microvilli relative to smooth areas of the plasma membrane or endocytosis pits (Lewis 1995\textsuperscript{272}, Fig. 2). The membrane ruffles and microvilli contain a delicate, three dimensional network of short fibrin fibers and fibrin protofibrils decorated in a linear fashion with anti-fibrinogen antibodies. oxLDL
treatment of macrophages resulted in similar preferential localization of TF antigen in membrane ruffles and microvilli.

Although the two studies use different terms, “cytoplasmic extensions” and “blebbed” (Carson 1993), vs “microvilli” and “membrane ruffles” (Lewis 1995), the terms, most likely, describe the same phenomenon.

oxLDL effect on TF activity

oxLDL increases TF activity. Consider the following study.

Lewis, et al., (1995) demonstrate the effect of oxLDL treatment on TF activity. In culture, monocytes, and monocyte-derived macrophages expressed little or no procoagulant activity. Endotoxin treatment induced TF activity, peaking at 4 to 6 hours and decreasing over the following 18 hours (Ibid, Fig. 1). Cells exposed to minimally oxidized LDL (oxLDL) showed similar TF activation. The endotoxin and oxLDL treatments resulted in 115- and 58-fold increase in TF activity, respectively (Ibid, Table 1).

oxLDL effect in non-monocytic cells

oxLDL also increases TF mRNA in smooth muscle cells (SMC) and endothelial cells. Consider the following two studies.

Quiescent rat SMC contained low levels of TF mRNA. Treatment of SMC with LDL or oxLDL significantly increased TF mRNA (Cui 1999, Fig. 1). Densitometric analysis showed that oxLDL increases TF mRNA 38% more than does LDL. The accumulation of TF mRNA induced by LDL or oxLDL was transient. Maximum level of TF mRNA was observed 1.5-2 hours following LDL or oxLDL stimulation (Ibid, Fig. 2), declining significantly over the following 5 hours. TF mRNA response to stimulation in human aortic SMC was similar. Nuclear run-on assays and mRNA stability experiments indicated that the increase in TF mRNA resulted mainly from increased transcription.

Another study exposed human endothelial cells to minimally oxidized LDL (oxLDL) or endotoxin for varying times. Northern blot analysis of total RNA showed a sharp increase in TF mRNA at 1 hour, a peak at 2 to 3 hours, and a decline to basal levels
at 6 to 8 hours after treatment. The half-life of TF mRNA in oxLDL and endotoxin exposed endothelial cells was approximately 45 and 40 minutes, respectively. The rate of TF mRNA degradation was similar at 1 and 4 hours post treatment. Nuclear runoff assays showed a significant increase in TF transcription rate following exposure of the cells to oxLDL or LPS (Fei 1993\textsuperscript{275}).

In monocytes/macrophages, oxLDL treatment reduces the binding of NF-κB to its site (see above). Since NF-κB stimulates TF transcription, the decreased binding diminishes the positive oxLDL effect on TF transcription mediated through the GABP site. In endothelial cells (Li 2000\textsuperscript{276}) and smooth muscle cells (Maziere 1996\textsuperscript{277}), oxLDL treatment increases the binding of NF-κB. This increase adds to the positive GABP mediated effect.

(ii) CD18

Oxidative stress reduces CD18 transcription. Consider the following study.

ICAM-1 is a ligand for CD18. Human polymorphonuclear leukocytes (PMN) were exposed to hypoxic condition. As a result, the adhesion of PMN to recombinant ICAM-1, but not BSA coated surfaces, increased (Montoya 1997\textsuperscript{278}, table 1). Anti-CD18 mAb abolished the increased adhesion (Ibid, Fig. 1). The antioxidant pyrroldine dithiocarbamate (PDTC) reduced PMN intracellular oxidative stress (Ibid, Fig. 2). PDTC treatment of PMN increased PMN adhesion to tumor necrosis factor-α (TNFα) stimulated HUVEC monolayers (Ibid, Fig. 4). Pyrroldine, which lacks antioxidant activity, failed to increase adhesion. Anti-CD18 abrogated the PDTC enhanced adhesion (Ibid, Fig. 5). Under flow conditions, a significant number of PMN were rolling at low velocities on the apical surface of the HUVEC monolayer. PDTC treatment reduced rolling distance and rolling velocities (Ibid, Fig. 10), increasing the number of stably adhered PMN. These observations indicate that reduced oxidative stress stimulates CD18 expression.

Hypoxia results in reduced oxidative stress, and therefore, stimulates GABP binding (Martin 1996\textsuperscript{279}). Increased GABP binding stimulates CD18 transcription (Rosmarin 1998\textsuperscript{280}), and therefore, CD18 adhesion. The observations in Montoya (1997, above) are consistent with such a mechanism.
81

(c) Special oxidative stress inducers

(i) Oxidized LDL

Oxidative stress inducers of special importance (see below) are mmLDL and oxLDL.

5

Oxidized LDL depletes GSH

mmLDL and oxLDL deplete intracellular GSH, and therefore induce oxidative stress. Consider the following studies.

GSH content was determined in cultured human endothelial cells after 24 h incubation with native LDL or oxLDL at 30, 40 or 50 μg of protein/ml. The results showed that at 30 μg/mg, GSH content slightly but significantly increased (10%). In contrast, at 40 and 50 μg/ml, the GSH content decreased by 15 and 32%, respectively, (only significant at 50 μg/ml, P < 0.05) (Therond 2000281, Fig. 2B). Moreover, the results also showed that all oxLDL lipid fractions induced depletion of intracellular GSH (Ibid, Fig. 3B).

15

Another study tested the effect of a specific oxLDL fraction on intracellular GSH. Human promyelocytic leukemia cells U937 were treated with 7-ketocholesterol. U937 cells were used since they respond to oxysterols in concentrations similar to those observed in endothelial and smooth muscle cells, and since U937 are frequently used to model the response of macrophages to oxysterols in humans. The GSH content was measured by flow cytometry with monochlorobimane. The results are summarized in figure 19 (Lizard 1998282, Fig 5A).

At all time points, GSH content in the 7-ketocholesterol treated cells was lower compared to controls (P < 0.05).

Oxidized LDL cell loading reduces CD18 expression

25

According to Gray and Shankar (1995283) "AthMφ (Atherosclerotic Macrophages) showed a substantial reduction in CD11b and CD18 cell surface expression. NMφ (Normal rabbit peripheral blood Monocytes), on the other hand, had strong surface expression of both CD11b and CD18. ... In comparison to NMφ that have been in cell
culture for a short time, cell surface expression of the CD11b/CD18 integrin on AthM0 is strongly down-regulated. Furthermore, these immunohistochemical studies provided evidence that the loss of CD11b/CD18 integrins is a function of the extent of lipid loading and perhaps the stage of the foam cell formation. It is our observation from looking at these cytologic preparations, that when stained for adhesion molecules, the smaller more normal appearing cells with very little lipid in them actually have the majority of staining, whereas the larger, more lipid laden cells have absolutely no staining in them.”

**Oxidized LDL cell loading reduces forward motility**

Mouse peritoneal macrophages were loaded with lipids by precubation with acetylated LDL (acLDL) for various periods (100 μg/ml). The macrophages turned foam cells were used to fill the upper wells of a modified Boyden chamber. The lower wells contained Zymosan A activated mouse serum (ZAMS). Zymosan A is a cell-wall extract of *Saccharomyces cerevisiae*. ZAMS is a chemoattractant for macrophages. After 3 h, the membrane in the Boyden chamber was removed and the cells which did not migrate to the lower surface were wiped off. The migrated cells were fixed and counted. The results showed decreased macrophage migration with increased precubation time with acLDL. Since, precubation time correlated positively with lipid content, higher lipid content resulted in reduced migration (Trach 1996, Fig. 4a,b). (Similar results are reported in Pataki, *et al.*, (1992), an earlier study with H. Robenek as principle investigator.) Quinn, *et al.*, (1985) also reports reduced motility of resident macrophages with modified LDL as chemoattractant.

Bacterial particles are macrophage chemoattractants (for LPS, see above, for fMLP, see Yamada, *et al.*, (1992)). However, it seems likely that macrophage loading with one type of toxic substance (oxLDL, bacterial particles) reduces chemoattractance of the other. The results in the above studies are consistent with such a concept. In these studies, the zamosan chemoattractance was reduced with the increase in cell loading of modified LDL.

(ii) Bacterial particles
Bacterial particles, such as LPS or fMLP (a syntactic particle that represents bacterial products), are another important type of oxidative stress inducers (see below).

The products of the respiratory burst have low molecular weight, and therefore, diffuse out of the phagolysosome into cytoplasm and nucleus. The resulting oxidative stress effects TF transcription through the N-box and not the NF-κB site (see above). On the other hand, the bacterial particles, such as LPS, also increase TF transcription through the NF-κB site. These two effects act synergistic. Such a synergy is probably needed for quick removal of the relatively highly toxic bacterial particles (compared to oxLDL toxicity) by faster clearance of bacterially loaded macrophages from infected tissues.

c) Net propulsion

Consider a tissue resident molecule which is both an oxidant and an ERK agent. As an ERK agent the molecule chemoattracts circulating or resident leukocytes by increasing their expression of CD18 and α4 integrin, inducing forward motility. The leukocyte migrate toward the molecule and phagocytize it. Once internalized, the molecule induces oxidative stress, i.e., depletes GSH, which, in turn, reduces binding of GABP to the N-boxes on TF, CD18 and α4 integrin, resulting in increased expression of TF and reduced expression of CD18 and α4 integrin. These changes reduces forward propulsion and increase backward propulsion, until backward propulsion is greater. Since net force is the vector sum of all forces acting upon an object, the new net propulsion turns the leukocyte back toward circulation. The final step of this process is reentry into circulation.

C. Atherosclerosis- fibrous cap atheroma formation

The first major class of atherosclerotic lesions is the fibrous cap atheroma. The fibrous cap is a distinct layer of connective tissue completely covering a lipid core. The fibrous cap consists of smooth muscle cells in a collagen-proteoglycan matrix with a variable number of macrophages and lymphocytes (Virmani 2000). The following sections describe the mechanism of fibrous cap atheroma formation.
1. **LDL pollution**

Plasma LDLs passively cross the endothelium (see below) by diffusion through the plasma membrane. Higher concentration of plasma LDL result in increased influx of LDL. Unlike other tissues, the intima lacks lymphatic vessels. Therefore, to reach the nearest lymphatic vessels, located in the medial layer, the LDL should pass through the intima. However, this passage is partly blocked by an elastic layer situated between the intima and the media (Pentikainen 2000\textsuperscript{289}). According to Nordestgaard, *et al.*, (1990\textsuperscript{290}) “less than 15% of the LDL cholesteryl ester that entered the arterial intima penetrated beyond the internal elastic lamina.” A fraction of the influxed LDL is passively effluxed through the endothelium. Another fraction is hydrolyzed. The remaining intimal LDLs bind the extracellular matrix (ECM). The ECM is composed of a tight negatively charged proteoglycan network. Certain sequences in the LDL apoB-100 contain clusters of the positively charged amino acids lysine and arginine. These sequences, called heparin-binding domains, interact with the negatively charged sulphate groups of the glycosaminoglycan chains of the proteoglycans (Boren 1998\textsuperscript{291}, Pentikainen 2000\textsuperscript{292}). Subendothelial agents modify (oxidize) the matrix bound LDL.

**Passive influx**

Nordestgaard 1992\textsuperscript{293} reports a linear correlation between plasma concentration of cholesterol in LDL, IDL, VLDL and arterial influx. Moreover, in cholesterol-fed rabbits, pigs and humans, arterial influx of lipoproteins depended on lipoprotein particle size. Other studies report that arterial influx of LDL in normal rabbits did not depend on endothelial LDL receptors. According to Nordestgaard, *et al.*, these results indicate that the transfer of lipoprotein across endothelial cells and into the intima is a “nonspecific molecular sieving mechanism.” Schwenke (1997\textsuperscript{294}) measured the intima-media permeability to LDL in different arterial regions in normal rabbits on a cholesterol-free chow diet. The results showed that the aortic arch is 2.5-fold more permeable to LDL compared to descending thoracic aorta (Ibid, Table 2). The concentration of undegraded LDL in the aortic arch was almost twice as great compared to the descending thoracic aorta (Ibid, Table 3). In cholesterol-fed rabbits, as a result of hypercholesterolemia, the mass transport of LDL cholesterol into all arterial regions was greatly increased. However, hypercholesterolemia did not influence intima-media permeability of any
arterial region (Ibid, Table 2). Kao, et al., (1994)\textsuperscript{295}, Kao, et al., (1995)\textsuperscript{296} showed that open junctions with gap widths of 30-450 nm between adjacent endothelial cells were only observed in the branched regions of the aortic arch, and not in the unbranched regions of the thoracic aorta. Moreover, LDL labeled with colloidal gold were present within most of these open junctions, while no gold particles were found in the normal intercellular channels (i.e., 25 nm and less) of both regions. These results are consistent with a nonspecific molecular sieving mechanism.

\textbf{Passive efflux}

Rabbits of the St Thomas’s Hospital strain show elevated plasma levels of VLDL, IDL, and LDL. In both lesioned and nonlesioned aortic arches of these rabbits, the logarithms of the fractional loss of VLDL, IDL, LDL, HDL, were inversely and linearly correlated with the diameter of these macromolecules (Nordestgaard 1995\textsuperscript{297}). This observation suggests that, similar to influx, the efflux of LDL through the endothelium can also be described as a “nonspecific molecular sieving mechanism.”

2. LDL clearance

\textit{a) Model}

Modified LDL is chemotactic to circulating monocytes (see above). As a result, endothelial cells increase the surface expression of P-selectin and circulating monocytes increase CD18 and $\alpha_4$ integrin expression (other surface molecules also change their expression). The increased expression of forward propulsion genes increases adhesion of circulating monocytes to the endothelium (margination) and emigration (see forward motility above). Once in the intima, monocytes differentiate into macrophages and start to accumulate modified LDL thereby turning into foam cells. The intracellular oxidative stress induced by the modified LDL particles decreases CD18 and $\alpha_4$ integrin transcription and stimulates TF transcription. The decreased CD18 and $\alpha_4$ integrin expression reduces forward propulsion. The transient increase in TF activity on the surface of foam cells induces backward propulsion. When backward propulsion surpasses forward propulsion the cell turns back. When the foam cells reach the endothelium, they first bind the basal
surface and then the apical surface of the endothelium. When TF adhesion activity returns to its basal level, the apical bound foam cells are released into circulation.

**b) Observations**

(1) Enhanced forward motility

There is extensive research showing more adhesion and emigration of monocytes in atherosclerosis.

(2) Enhanced backward motility

(a) Foam cell clearance

The results of the following studies are consistent with clearance of foam cells.

Twenty-two Yorkshire pigs were fed a high fat diet. The animals were killed 12, 15 and 30 weeks after diet initiation, and tissue samples were examined by light and electron microscopy. At 15 weeks, lesions were visible as raised ridges even at low magnification (Gerrity 1981\(^\text{298}\), Fig. 1). Large numbers of monocytes were adherent to the endothelium over lesions, generally in groups (Ibid, Fig. 5), unlike the diffused adhesion observed at prelesion areas. Foam cells overlaid lesions at all three stages, although more frequently at 12 and 15 weeks. The foam cells had numerous flaplike lamellipodia and globular substructure (Ibid, Fig. 6). Some foam cells were fixed while passing through the endothelium, trapped in endothelial junctions alone (Ibid, Fig. 8) or in pairs (Ibid, Fig. 9). In all cases, the attenuated endothelial cells were pushed luminally (Ibid, Fig. 14). The lumenal portion of the trapped foam cells had an irregular shape, with numerous cytoplasmic flaps (lamellipodia and veil structures), empty vacuoles and reduced lipid content compared to the intimal part of the cell (Ibid, Fig. 8 and 9). Foam cells were also infrequently found in buffy coat preparations from arterial blood samples (Ibid, Fig. 7), and rarely in venous blood. According to Gerrity, these findings are consistent with backward migration of foam cells and suggest that such a migration indicates the existence of a foam cell mediated lipid clearance system.

Another study fed 10 male pigtail monkeys an atherogenic diet and 4 monkeys a control diet. Twelve days after diet initiation, and at monthly intervals up to 13 months,
animals were killed and tissue samples were examined by light and electron microscopy. The endothelial surface of the aorta in control animals was covered with a smooth, structurally intact endothelium (Faggiotto 1984-I^299, Fig. 4A). Occasionally, the surface showed small focal areas protruding into the lumen (Ibid, Fig. 4B). Cross sectional examination of the protrusions revealed foam cells underlying the intact endothelium (Ibid, Fig. 3A). During the first 3 months, the endothelium remained intact. However, on larger protrusions the endothelium was extremely thin and highly deformed. At 3 months, the arterial surface contained focal sites of endothelial separation with a foam cell filling the gap (Ibid, Fig. 10A). The luminal section of the foam cell showed numerous lamellipodia. In addition, thin sections of endothelial cells bridged over the exposed foam cell, deforming the surface of the foam cell (Ibid, Fig. 10B). Moreover, rare occasional foam cells were observed in blood smears of some controls. During the first 3 months, when the endothelium was intact, the number of circulating foam cells increased (Faggiotto 1984-II^300, Fig. 10). Based on these observations Faggiotto, et al., concluded that foam cells egress from the artery wall into the blood stream, confirming the conclusions of Gerrity (1981).

A third study feed 36 male New Zealand White rabbits a cholesterol-enriched diet and 37 rabbits a control diet. Both groups were exposed to electrical stimulation (ES) known to induce arteriosclerotic lesions. The stimulation program lasted 1, 2, 3, 7, 14, or 28 days. At these intervals, tissue samples were collected, processed, and examined by transmission electron microscopy (TEM). After 1 day of ES, intimal macrophages of hypercholesterolemic rabbits showed loading of lipids (Kling 1993^301, Fig. 3b). These cells were often responsible for markedly stretching the overlying endothelial cells. After 2 days, foam cells were fixed while passing through endothelial junctions (Ibid, Fig. 8a). Neighboring endothelial cells were often pushed luminally, indicating outward movement of the macrophage (Ibid, Fig. 8a). The outward movement of the cells was also supported by the finding that the intimal portion of the foam cells transmigrating the endothelium was intact, while the lumina portion was often ruptured and associated with platelets. (Ibid, Fig. 8b,c). Under the prolonged influence of the atherogenic diet, emerging foam cells became more frequent. In all cases, the emerging foam cells migrated through endothelial junctions without damaging the endothelium. Based on these observations, Kling, et al., concluded that "similar to observations of Gerrity and Faggiotto, et al., we have electro
microscopic evidence that the macrophages, loaded with lipid droplets, were capable of migrating back from the intima into the bloodstream ... thus ferrying lipid out of the vessel wall.”

(b) Increased TF expression on foam cell

The following studies show increased TF expression on foam cells.

Seven White Carneau pigeons were fed an atherogenic diet and three animals received a control diet. The diet regimen lasted 8-10 months and was shown to be sufficient to induce lesions in the thoracic aorta. The concentrations of tissue factor (TF) antigen in circulating monocytes, cultured macrophages, and macrophages from atherosclerotic lesions were ultrastructurally analyzed using immunogold labeling. The plasma cholesterol of the cholesterol-fed animals was elevated compared to controls. Upon dissection, all cholesterol-fed animals revealed fatty streaks and atherosclerotic plaque at the celiac bifurcation of the thoracic aorta. Monocytes isolated from normocholesterolemic and hypercholesterolemic animals had approximately 1 immunogold particle per 2 μm of plasma membrane (Landers 1994302, Fig. 2). The low level of TF antigen in the plasma membrane is consistent with the lack of TF procoagulant activity in freshly-isolated monocytes or monocyte-derived macrophages maintained in culture. Monocytes newly adherent to lesion surface also showed low levels of TF antigen (0.3 particles/μm of plasma membrane). In contrast, the lumenally exposed surface of foam cells projecting into the arterial lumen from subendothelial intima showed high levels of TF antigen (7.3 particles/μm of plasma membrane). The distribution of TF concentrations on the surface of macrophages was bimodal. Circulating and newly adherent macrophages had low levels of TF antigen. Projecting foam cells had high level of TF antigen. (The immunogold labeling of endothelial cells either underlying the adherent macrophages or flanking intimal foam cells protruding into the lumen was minimal.) According to Landers, et al., these observations are consistent with the egressing foam cells reported by Gerrity. Another unpublished observation reported in Landers, et al., (1994) is the association between short term lesion regression and the transient increase in clot formation on lesions.
Faggiotto 1984-1983 showed the existence of foam cells in peripheral blood smears from hyperlipidemic monkeys. Most of these cells showed no adherence to plastic cell culture dishes, however, TF induces such adherence. Since egressing foam cells show high concentrations of TF antigen, either TF is removed from the cell surface while in circulation or, more likely, TF adhesion activity is reduced by encryption (see below).

Lander, et al., (1994) and Faggiotto, et al., (1984) observations are consistent with the following model. Modified LDL increases TF transcription. The initial increase in TF concentration on the surface of foam cells results in backward motility. The cells pass through gap junctions by first binding the basal and then the apical side of the endothelium. Concurrently, the concentration of surface TF continues to increase. The additional surface TF deactivates many surface TF molecules through the formation of TF dimers (encryption). The encrypted foam cells are consequently released from the endothelium surface and join circulation.

3. Atherogenesis

a) Model

Let $Trapped_{PC}$, $Egress_{PC}$ and $Total_{PC}$ denote the number foam cells trapped in the intima, the number of foam cells in the process of egressing from the subendothelial space and the total number of intimal foam cells, respectively. $Trapped_{PC} + Egress_{PC} = Total_{PC}$. Denote the fraction of foam cells trapped in the intima with $\%_{Trapped}$. Assume that inefficiencies in foam cell backward motility, denoted I, increase $\%_{Trapped}$, which is the percentage of trapped foam cells. Also assume that $\%_{Trapped}$ is independent of $Total_{PC}$, the total number of intimal foam cells.

1. $Trapped_{PC} = \%_{Trapped}(I) \times Total_{PC}$.

Let $Rate_{lesions}$ denote the rate of atherosclerotic lesion formation.

2. $Rate_{lesions} = f(Trapped_{PC}) = f(\%_{Trapped}(I) \times Total_{PC})$.

The following derivatives summarize the relationship between changes in $Total_{PC}$ or I and $Rate_{lesions}$.
(3) \[
\frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Total}_{\text{FC}}} = \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{\text{FC}}} \cdot %_{\text{Trapped}}
\]

(4) \[
\frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial l} = \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{\text{FC}}} \cdot \text{Total}_{\text{FC}} \cdot \frac{\partial %_{\text{Trapped}}}{\partial l}
\]

Consider equation 3. \( \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{\text{FC}}} > 0 \). %_{\text{Trapped}} is fixed. Therefore, \( \frac{\partial %_{\text{Trapped}}}{\partial \text{Total}_{\text{FC}}} > 0 \), an increase in total number of intimal foam cells increases the rate of lesions formation. An increase in LDL pollution increases the entry of monocytes which increases the total number of intimal foam cells thereby resulting in increased rate of lesion formation.

Consider equation 4. \( \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{\text{FC}}} > 0 \). \( \text{Total}_{\text{FC}} > 0 \). \( \frac{\partial %_{\text{Trapped}}}{\partial l} > 0 \). Therefore, \( \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial l} > 0 \), an increase in backward motility inefficiencies increases the rate of lesion formation.

**b) Observations**

There are numerous observations consistent with such a model of atherogenesis. Most of these observations relate to the effect of the total number of intimal foam cells on rate of lesion formation (equation 3). For instance, diet or genetically induced hypercholesterolemia increase plasma concentrations of LDL, resulting in increased LDL pollution. The increased oxidized LDL bound to the ECM chemoattracts monocytes. As expected in equation 3, the increase in \( \text{Total}_{\text{FC}} \) results in an increased rate of lesion formation. Another example is LDL pollution of the edges of blood vessel bifurcations resulting from low shear stress (Malek 1999). As expected, these areas show a higher propensity to develop atherosclerotic lesions.

The opposite direction also holds. A reduction in LDL pollution reduces the rate of atherosclerotic formation. For instance, studies showed that in an animal, several months of a lipid-reduced diet resulted in a decreased number of foam cells and regression
of fatty streaks (Trach 1996\textsuperscript{305}, Pataki 1992\textsuperscript{306}, Wissler 1990\textsuperscript{307}, Dudrick 1987\textsuperscript{308}, Tucker 1971\textsuperscript{309}). Other studies showed that a genetic deficiency in ICAM-1, P-selectin or E-selectin (Collins 2000\textsuperscript{310}), a genetic double deficiency in P-selectin and E-selectin (Dong 1998\textsuperscript{311}) or treatment with monoclonal antibodies against VAL4 or ICAM-1 (Patel 1997\textsuperscript{312}) reduced monocyte recruitment resulting in a diminished rate of atherosclerotic lesions formation. More studies showed that a mutation in all basic amino acids in the proteoglycan-binding region of apoB-100, which prevents binding of the heparin proteoglycans in ECM, resulted in only mild atherosclerosis despite strong hypercholesterolemia (Pentikainen 2000\textsuperscript{313}). The diminished concentration of ECM bound oxLDL attracted fewer monocytes resulting in reduced Total\textsubscript{PC}.

For a review of the different theories of atherosclerosis, see Stary, et al., (1994\textsuperscript{314}).

c) Microcompetition

(1) Endothelial layer

(a) Microcompetition increased monocyte recruitment

Latent infection of endothelial cells increases P-selectin expression thereby inducing increased transmigration of monocytes. According to equation (3) above, the increased number of foam cells increases the rate of lesion formation.

(2) Subendothelial space

(a) Subendothelial environment stimulates virus replication intensifying microcompetition

The subendothelial environment transactivates latent viral infection in monocytes turned macrophages. Consider the following studies.

Cytomegalovirus (CMV) is a GABP virus. Circulating monocytes are nonpermissive for CMV replication, they show no expression of viral gene products even when cells harbor a viral genome (Taylor-Wiedeman 1994\textsuperscript{315}). In monocytes the virus is in a latent state. Viral replication is dependent on expression of viral immediate-early (IE) gene products controlled by the major immediate-early promoter (MIEP). HL-60, promyelocytic leukemia cells that can differentiate into macrophages, were transfected
with MIEP-CAT, a reporter-plasmid construct controlled by the CMV MIEP. Coculture of MIEP-CAT-transfected cells with endothelial cells (ECs) increased MIEP-CAT activity 1.7 fold over baseline activity in noncocultured HL-60 cells (Guetta 1997\textsuperscript{316}, Fig. 1A). Coculture of MIEP-CAT-transfected cells with smooth muscle cells (SMCs) increased MIEP-CAT activity 4.5-fold over baseline (Ibid, Fig. 1B). Treatment with 50 to 200 µg/mL oxLDL activated MIEP in a concentration dependent manner (Ibid, Fig. 2). A 2.0-fold increase was the largest observed effect of oxLDL (Ibid, Fig. 1C). Coculture with ECs plus oxLDL led to a 7.1-fold increase over baseline, larger than the two separate effects. Based on these results Guetta, \textit{et al.}, concluded that exposure of monocytes turned macrophages to ECs, SMCs, and oxLDL in the subendothelial space favors transactivation of latent CMV.

Moreover, when cerulenin, an inhibitor of fatty acid biosynthesis, was added to mouse fibroblasts infected with Moloney murine leukemia virus (MMuLV), virus production was drastically reduced (Ikuta 1986\textsuperscript{317}, Katoh 1986\textsuperscript{318}). Cerulenin also inhibited Rous sarcoma virus (RSV) production in chick embryo fibroblasts (Goldfine 1978\textsuperscript{319}).

Following entry to the subendothelial space, monocytes differentiate into macrophages. Monocyte differentiation transactivated the human CMV IE gene (Taylor-Wiedeman 1994\textsuperscript{320}), and, in some cases, produced productive HCMV infection (Ibanez 1991\textsuperscript{321}, Lathey 1991\textsuperscript{322}). Similarly, differentiation of THP-1 premonocytes (Weinshenker 1988\textsuperscript{323}) and T2 teratocarcinoma cells (Gonczol 1984\textsuperscript{324}) also produced HCMV replication.

Subendothelial monocyte-derived macrophages are exposed to ECs, SMCs and oxLDL. If a macrophage harbors a GABP viral genome, the subendothelial environment stimulates viral replication and the increase in viral DNA intensifies microcompetition.

\begin{itemize}
\item (b) \textit{Microcompetition reduces intimal forward motility (macrophage superficial stop)}
\item Increased viral replication in the subendothelial space intensifies microcompetition leading to reduced expression of CD18 and α4 integrin which stops the macrophage at a reduced intimal depth. The oxLDL deep in the intima is not cleared and remains ECM
bound. While trapped foam cells form fatty streaks, the ECM bound oxLDLs form the lipid core of the atherosclerotic plaque. The following observations are consistent with such a mechanism.

The core of an atherosclerotic plaque actually forms concurrently with fatty streaks. The core has a tendency to extend from a position initially deep in the intima toward the lumen of the artery with increasing age. The lipid in the core region seems to originate directly from plasma lipoproteins and not from foam cell necrosis. Foam cells are usually seen in superficial intima in the region between the core and the endothelial surface (Guyton 1995\textsuperscript{325}). Consider the following two photomicrographs, figures 20 and 21, as examples (Stary 1995\textsuperscript{326}, Fig. 1 and Fig. 2).

Figure 20 is a photomicrograph of atheroma (type IV lesion) in proximal left anterior descending coronary artery from a 23-year-old man who died of a homicide. Extracellular lipids form a confluent core in the musculoelastic layer of eccentric adaptive thickening. The region between the core and the endothelial surface contains macrophages and foam cells (FC). There is no increase in smooth muscle cells or collagenous fibers. “A” indicates adventitia, “M,” media. Fixation by pressure-perfusion with glutaraldehyde and maraglas embedding. One-micron thick section. About 55x magnification.

Figure 21 is a photomicrograph of thick part of atheroma (type IV lesion) in proximal left anterior descending coronary artery from a 19-year-old man who committed suicide. Core of extracellular lipid includes the formation of cholesterol crystals. Foam cells (FC) overlie core on the aspect toward lumen. Macrophages that are not foam cells (arrows) occupy the proteoglycan layer (pgc) adjacent to endothelium (E) at lesion surface. “A” indicates adventitia, “M,” media. Fixation by pressure-perfusion with glutaraldehyde and maraglas embedding. One-micron thick section. About 220x magnification.

\( (c) \) Microcompetition reduces backward motility (reduced foam cell clearance)

The studies by Randolph, et al., (1996\textsuperscript{327}) and Randolph, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{328}) (see above) have a similar experimental setting. However, Randolph, et al., (1996) tested the
effect of mAb against ICAM-1 and mAb against CD18 on reverse transmigration. The results showed that Fab fragments of mAb against ICAM-1 (R6.5) completely blocked egression of mononuclear phagocytes (MP) from IL-1-treated HUVEC/amnion cultures for a total of 5 h (Ibid, Fig. 9A). When incubation of MP-HUVEC cocultures (IL-1-pretreated HUVEC) was extended to 12 h, anti-ICAM-1 Fab fragments inhibited reverse transmigration of monocytes by 53% (Ibid, Fig. 9b). Anti CD18 Fab fragments (TS1/18) suppressed reverse transmigration by an average of 71% at 5 h of incubation (Ibid, Fig. 9a). Based on these observations Randolph, et al., concluded that one role of CD18 and ICAM-1 in reverse transmigration is to accelerate initial kinetics.

These results indicate the existence of an intial delay in the activation of TF propelled backward motility. This delay might be necessary to allow other cell changes required for TF propelled motility such as cell skeleton modifications. During this delay other molecules, such as CD18, propel backward motility.

Many studies measured the effect of certain agents on TF activity over the first few hours following treatment. For instance, Key, et al., (1993\textsuperscript{329}) infected HUVEC with herpes simplex virus-1 (HSV-1) or exposed the cells to LPS and measured TF PCA activity. Schecter, et al., (1997\textsuperscript{330}) measured the effect of platelet-derived growth factor (PDGF) stimulation on TF activity on surface of human aortic smooth muscle cell (SMC). The results reported in these studies are presented in figure 22. HSV-1 and LPS lines represent PCA activity in U/ml (Key 1993, Fig. 1). PDGF line represents TF activity relative to untreated cells (Schecter 1997, Fig. 7).

Lewis, et al., (1995\textsuperscript{331}) reported stimulated monocytes, and monocyte-derived macrophages with oxLDL or LPS (see above) and measured TF activity. The results showed that both agents had similar effects.

Combining the observations in Randolph, et al., (1996\textsuperscript{332}) with these observations suggests that TF driven backward motility starts around the time when TF activity is maximized. Moreover, TF propelled reverse transmigration occurs while TF activity is declining. We call this observation a "soft landing." We propose that a soft landing might reduce the probability of an undesired coagulation reaction on the surface of egressed
foam cells or might increase the probability of foam cell release from the apical surface of endothelium.

In general, $a_{TF}$ denotes TF activity and $c_{TF}$ denotes TF surface concentration on cell surface. Let $a_{TF}_{stop}$ denote TF activity that cannot support reverse transmigration. If $a_{TF}_{stop}$ is reached before a foam cell has reached the apical surface of the endothelium, the cell is trapped. Let $\Delta c_{TF_{oxLDL}}$, $\Delta c_{TF_{V}}$ denote an increase is TF membrane concentration resulting from stimulation with oxLDL and from microcompetition with a GABP virus, respectively. Let $a_{TF}_{basal}$ denote basal TF activity prior to stimulation.

Consider a control cell, denoted "cc," and a cell harboring a GABP viral genome, denoted "vc." Microcompetition between the TF promoter and the GABP virus stimulates TF transcription (see the section on TF gene, above). Let $t = 0$ mark the time of monocyte completed differentiation into a macrophage following entry into subendothelial space. For every $t > 0$, microcompetition results in $\Delta c_{TF_{V}}(t) > 0$.

In both cells, for every $t > 0$, $c_{TF}(t) = c_{TF_{basal}} + \Delta c_{TF}(t)$. However, for viral cell $c_{\Delta TF}(t) = \Delta c_{TF_{oxLDL}}(t) + \Delta c_{TF_{V}}(t)$ (we assume an additive effect for the oxLDL and virus combination). Since $\Delta c_{TF_{V}}(t) > 0$ for viral cells, at any time $t$, TF concentration on surface of a viral cell is greater than TF concentration on surface of control cell. Consider figure 23.

"cc, $a_{TF}$" and "vc, $c_{TF}$" lines represent the increase in TF surface concentration as a function of time for a control cell and viral harboring cell, respectively. The "cc, $a_{TF}$" and "vc, $c_{TF}$" curves represent the change in TF activity as a function of time for these cells. The vertical distance between "vc, $c_{TF}$" and "cc, $c_{TF}$" represents the effect of microcompetition on the surface concentration of TF. The increase in surface TF concentration shifts the "vc, $c_{TF}$" curve to the left. As a rule, in both cells the same TF surface concentration generates the same TF activity. For instance, points 7 and 8 represent the same surface concentration and therefore produce the same activity, represented by points 5 and 9, the points of maximum activity. Points 1 and 3 also represent the same surface concentration. These points produce activity 2 and 4, the activity associated with cells at rest, or "stopped" cells.
For every delay $\geq 0$, $t_{\text{stop}}^{cc} - t_{\text{start}} > t_{\text{stop}}^{vc} - t_{\text{start}}$ (see figure). The time during which the viral cell is actually moving towards circulation is shorter compared to control. Assume the probability of reaching the endothelial apical surface increases with movement time. Since the viral cell movement time is shorter, its probability of being trapped is higher.

Another observation relates to cell velocity. Assume the delay is the same for both cells, i.e. cc vc. The shift of the "vc, 'TF" curve results in lower TF activity on the viral cell for every t of actual movement (every $t > t_{\text{start}}$ in the figure). Assume that cell velocity depends on TF activity. Then, at any time, the viral cell is slower than the control cell. The reduced velocity also increases the probability of being trapped.

Microcompetition between a GABP virus and TF increases the probability of being trapped in the subendothelial space. Denote the number of viral N-boxes with $V_{Nbox}$. Higher $V_{Nbox}$ increases the inefficiencies in foam cell backward motility, denoted I in the above clearance model.

Modify equation (2).

\[ \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}} = f(%\text{Trapped}(I(V_{Nbox})) \times \text{Total}_{FC} \]

The following derivative represents the effect of $V_{Nbox}$ on $\text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}$, the rate of lesion formation.

\[ \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial V_{Nbox}} = \frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{FC}} \times \text{Total}_{FC} \times \frac{\partial %\text{Trapped}}{\partial I} \times \frac{\partial I}{\partial V_{Nbox}} \]

Consider equation (6). $\frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial \text{Trapped}_{FC}} > 0$, Total$_{FC} > 0$, $\frac{\partial %\text{Trapped}}{\partial I} > 0$ (see above). $\frac{\partial %\text{Trapped}}{\partial V_{Nbox}} > 0$. Therefore, $\frac{\partial \text{Rate}_{\text{lesions}}}{\partial V_{Nbox}} > 0$. Microcompetition increases the rate of lesion formation. Moreover, the larger the number of viral N-boxes in the infected cells, the higher the rate of lesion formation.

In addition, CD18 is also a GABP stimulated gene (see above). Therefore, microcompetition between the GABP virus and CD18 gene results in reduced expression.
of the cellular gene. According to Randolph, et al., (1996), the role of CD18 is to accelerate the initial kinetics of reverse transmigration (see above). A decrease in CD18 expression might further reduce foam cell velocity, increasing the probability of being trapped in the subendothelial space. Microcompetition therefore has a double impact on reverse transmigration.

D. Atherosclerosis-intimal thickening

A second major class of atherosclerotic lesions is pathological intimal thickening. Intimal thickening consists mainly of smooth muscle cells in a proteoglycan-rich matrix. Pathological intimal thickening should be considered as a class independent of fibrous cap atheroma since the majority of lesion erosion occurs over areas of intimal thickening with minimal or no evidence of a lipid core (Virmani 2000333). Smooth muscle cell (SMC) proliferation, which results in neointima formation and intimal thickening, accounts for a significant rate of restenosis after percutaneous transluminal coronary angioplasty, a widespread treatment for coronary artery disease. The following sections identify the cause of SMC proliferation, neointima formation and intimal thickening in atherosclerosis.

1. Microcompetition reduces Rb transcription in SMC

SMCs are permissive to HCMV (Zhou 1996334) and HSV (Benditt 1983335). Rb is a GABP stimulated gene. Microcompetition with viral DNA decreases Rb transcription in SMCs (see the section on cancer).

2. Reduced Rb expression in atherosclerotic plaque

Rb mRNA is reduced in atherosclerotic plaque. Consider the following study.

Rabbits were fed a high cholesterol diet for six months. The results showed that the atherosclerotic plaques, covering 91% of the intimal aortic surface of aorta thoracalis, contained less Rb mRNA (P < 0.05) compared to normal aortic arteries (Wang 1996336). Based on this result, Wang, et al., suggested that “the abnormal expression of ... Rb antineogene may play an important role in arterial SMC proliferation and pathogenesis of atherosclerosis.”
3. **Increased pRb expression reduces neointima formation**

Rb is important in SMC arrest and differentiation. Increased Rb transcription (Claudio 1999\textsuperscript{337}, Schwartz 1999\textsuperscript{338}, Smith 1997\textsuperscript{339}), or reduced pRb phosphorylation (Gallo 1999\textsuperscript{340}), decreased SMC proliferation and neointima formation. Since microcompetition reduces Rb transcription, an infection with a GABP virus result in SMC proliferation, neointima formation and pathological intimal thickening.

**E. Thrombosis**

Plaque rupture may lead to in situ formation of a thrombus. The rupture exposes the TF excessively expressed on surface of foam cells. The exposed TF triggers the coagulation event.

**F. Viruses in atherosclerosis**

The idea of infection as a risk factor for atherosclerosis and related cardiovascular diseases is more than 100 years old. However, it was not until the 1970s that experimental data was published supporting the role of viruses in atherosclerosis. The mounting evidence linking infectious agents and atherosclerosis prompted the scientific community to organize the International Symposium of Infection and Atherosclerosis, held in Annecy, France, December 6-9, 1998. The main objective of the symposium was to evaluate the role of infection in the induction/promotion of atherosclerosis on the basis of evidence from recent data on pathogenesis, epidemiologic and experimental studies, to define prevention strategies and promote further research. Consider the following studies presented at the symposium. The studies were published in a special issue of the *American Heart Journal* (see American Heart Journal, November 1999).

Chiu presented a study which found positive immunostainings for C pneumoniae (63.6\%), cytomegalovirus (CMV) (42\%), herpes simplex virus-1 (HSV-1) (9\%), P gingivalis (42\%), and S sanguis (12\%) in carotid plaques. The study found 1 to 4 organisms in the same specimen (30\%, 24\%, 21\%, and 6\%, respectively) and the microorganisms were immunolocalized mostly in macrophages (Chiu 1999\textsuperscript{341}).

In a critical review of the epidemiologic evidence, Nieto suggested that "most epidemiologic studies to date (Nieto 1999\textsuperscript{342}, Table I and II) have used serum antibodies as
surrogate indicators of chronic viral infection. However, there is evidence suggesting that serum antibodies may not be a valid or reliable indicator of chronic or latent infections by certain viruses. In a pathological study of patients undergoing vascular surgery for atherosclerosis serology, for example, for the presence of serum cytomegalovirus antibodies was not related to the presence of cytomegalovirus DNA in atheroma specimens.” However, according to Nieto, four studies, Adam, et al., (1987\textsuperscript{343}), Li, et al., (1996\textsuperscript{344}), Liuzzo, et al., (1997\textsuperscript{345}) and Blum, et al., (1998\textsuperscript{346}) showed strong positive associations between CMV infection and clinical atherosclerosis. A strong association was also found in a 1974 survey of the participants in the Atherosclerosis Risk in Communities (ARIC) study between levels of cytomegalovirus antibodies and the presence of subclinical atherosclerosis, namely carotid intimal-medial thickness measured by B-mode ultrasound (Nieto 1999\textsuperscript{347}).

Nieto also reported results of a prospective study of clinical incident coronary heart disease (CHD). The study was a nested case-control study from the Cardiovascular Health Study (CHS) conducted in an elderly cohort. Preliminary results from this study found no association between cytomegalovirus antibodies at baseline and incident CHD over a 5 year period. However, HSV-1 was strongly associated with incident CHD, particularly among smokers (odds ratio [OR] 4.2). It should be noted that a more recent prospective study of CMV, HSV-1 in CHD found that participants in the Atherosclerosis Risk in Communities Study (ARIC) study with highest CMV antibody levels at base line (approximately in the upper 20%) showed increased relative risk (RR, 1.76, 95% confidence interval, 1.00-3.11) of CHD incidence over a 5 year period, adjusted for age, sex and race. After adjustment for additional covariates of hypertension, diabetes, years of education, cigarette smoking, low-density lipoprotein and high-density lipoprotein cholesterol levels, and fibrinogen level, the RR increased slightly. (The study found no association between CHD and the highest HSV-1 antibody levels (adjusted RR, 0.77; 95% confidence interval, 0.36-1.62) (Sorlie 2000\textsuperscript{348}).

Nieto (1999) also mentioned some recent studies which documented increased risk of restenosis after angioplasty in patients with serologic evidence of cytomegalovirus infection. For instance, Nieto reported a study by Zhou and colleagues which included 75 consecutive patients undergoing directional coronary atherectomy for symptomatic
coronary artery disease. Six months after atherectomy, the cytomegalovirus-seropositive patients showed significantly greater reduction in luminal diameter and significantly higher rate of restenosis compared to controls (43% vs 8% OR 8.7). These results were independent of known cardiovascular disease (CVD) risk factors.

Finally, Nieto mentioned that cytomegalovirus infection has been associated with another form of atherosclerotic disease: accelerated atherosclerosis in the coronaries after heart transplantation. In the first study showing this association, cytomegalovirus serology after transplantation seemed to be one of the most significant predictors of graft atherosclerosis and survival in general. This difference was independent of serologic status before transplantation and the presence of symptomatic infection. Similar results have been replicated in subsequent studies.

Based on these studies Nieto concludes that “despite its limitations, the epidemiologic evidence reviewed above is consistent with a broad range of experimental and laboratory evidence linking viral (and other) infections and atherosclerosis disease.”

In a review of animal studies, Fabricant, et al., (1999) described their experiments with Marek’s disease herpesvirus (MDV). The initial experiment used 4 groups of specific pathogen-free (SPF) white leghorn chickens, P-line cockerels of the same hatch, genetically selected for susceptibility to MDV infection. Groups 1 and 2 were inoculated intratracheally at 2 days of age with 100 plaque forming units of clone-purified, cell free, CU-2 strain of low-virulence MDV. Groups 3 and 4 were controls. For the first 15 weeks, all birds in the 4 groups were fed the same commercial low cholesterol diet (LCD). Beginning with the 16th and ending with the 30th week, MDV-infected group 2 and uninfected group 4 were placed on a high cholesterol diet (HCD). The other two groups remained on LCD. Atherosclerotic lesions visible at gross inspection were only observed in MDV-infected birds of groups 1 (LCD) and 2 (HCD). These arterial lesions were found in coronary arteries, aortas, and major arterial branches. In some instances, the marked atherosclerotic changes involved entire segments of the major arteries practically occluding the arterial lumen. Other arterial lesions visible at gross inspection were observed as discrete plaques of 1 to 2 mm. These arterial lesions were not found in any of the uninfected birds of group 3 (LCD) or the uninfected hypercholesterolemic birds.
of group 4. Many proliferative arterial lesions with intimal and medial foam cells, cholesterol clefts, and extracellular lipid and calcium deposits had marked resemblance to chronic human atherosclerotic lesions. Moreover, immunization against MDV prevented the MDV-induced atherosclerotic lesions.

The main conclusion of the symposium was that “although studies are accumulating that indicate a possible relation between infection and atherosclerosis, none of them has yet provided definite evidence of a causal relationship. ... Moreover, the demonstration of a causative role of infectious agents in atherosclerosis would have an enormous impact on public health” (Dodet 1999350) (A similar view is expressed in a review published recently, see Fong 2000351).

What is “definitive evidence?” What evidence will convince Dodet, and others, that viruses are not merely associated with atherosclerosis but actually cause the disease?

The research on viruses in cancer provides an answer. According to zur Hausen (1999352) “The mere presence of viral DNA within a human tumor represents a hint but clearly not proof for an etiological relationship. The same accounts for seroepidemiological studies revealing elevated antibody titres against the respective infection.” What constitute a proof is evidence that meets the following four criteria, especially the fourth one. According to zur Hausen “the fourth point could be taken as the most stringent criterion to pinpoint a causal role of an infection.”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Table 1: zur Hausen’s criteria for defining a causal role for an infection in cancer</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Epidemiological plausibility and evidence that a virus infection represents a risk factor for the development of a specific tumor.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Regular presence and persistence of the nucleic acid of the respective agent in cells of the specific tumor.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Stimulation of cell proliferation upon transfection of the respective genome or parts therefrom in corresponding tissue culture cells.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Demonstration that the induction of proliferation and the malignant phenotype of specific tumor cells depends on functions exerted by the persisting nucleic acid of the respective agent.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The fourth point requires an understanding of the “mechanisms of virus mediated cell transformation.” Crawford (1986\textsuperscript{353}) and Butel (2000\textsuperscript{354}) also emphasize the significance of understanding the mechanism in attributing a causal role to infection. According to Crawford: “one alternative approach to understanding the role of the papillomaviruses in cervical carcinoma is to identify the mechanisms by which this group of viruses may induce the malignant transformation of normal cells.” According to Butel: “molecular studies detected viral markers in tumors, but the mechanism of HBV involvement in liver carcinogenesis remains the subject of investigation today.” When the other kind of evidence is in place, understanding the mechanism turns a mere association into a causal relation.

The discovery of microcompetition and its effect on macrophage propulsion and SMC replication provides the mechanism that produces atherosclerosis. This discovery supplies the missing “definitive evidence” for a causal relationship between viruses and atherosclerosis.

G. Metastasis

1. Increased TF expression promotes metastasis

The expression of TF is increased in various metastatic tumors such as non-small-cell lung cancers (Sawada 1999\textsuperscript{355}), colorectal cancer (Shigemori 1998\textsuperscript{356}), melanoma (Meuller 1992\textsuperscript{357}), prostate cancer (Adamson 1993\textsuperscript{358}), colorectal carcinoma cell lines and metastatic sublines to the liver (Katoaka 1997\textsuperscript{359}), breast cancer (Sturm 1992\textsuperscript{360}), and in a variety of cancer cell lines (Hu 1994\textsuperscript{361}). Moreover, TF expression directly correlates with tumor aggressiveness (see above studies and following reviews, Ruf 2000\textsuperscript{362}, Schwartz 1998\textsuperscript{363}).

In an intervention study which generated two matched sets of cloned human melanoma lines, one expressing a high level and the other a low level of normal human TF molecule, by retroviral-mediated transfections of a nonmetastatic parental line. The tumor cells were injected into the tail vein of severe combined immunodeficiency (SCID) mice. The results showed that metastatic tumors in 86% of the mice injected with the high-TF lines and in 5% of the mice injected with the low-TF lines (Bromberg 1995\textsuperscript{364}). Based on
these results, Bromberg, et al., concluded that “high TF level promotes metastasis of human melanoma in the SCID mouse model.”

2. Microcompetition increases TF transcription, and therefore, metastasis

TF is a GABP suppressed gene. Microcompetition increases TF transcription (see above). Therefore, an infection with a GABP virus promotes metastasis.

3. Osteoarthritis

H. Mutation studies

1. Collagen type I α2 chain (COL1A2)

   a) COL1A2 is a microcompetition-repressed gene

   See above (the study with viral plasmid).

   Moreover, the COL1A2 is ERK responsive. ERK stimulates COL1A2 transcription. One study examined the influence of hypergravity on collagen synthesis in human osteoblast-like cells (hOB), as well as the involvement of the MAP kinase signaling cascade. They found that hypergravity led to significantly increased phosphorylation of ERK 1/2. When the MAPK kinase pathway was inhibited by PD98059, hypergravity-induced stimulation of both collagen synthesis as well as COL1A2 mRNA expression decreased by about 50% (Gebken 1999365).

2. COL1A2 deficiency

   a) COL1A2 causes EDS

   A latent infection by a GABP virus results in microcompetition between viral DNA and the COL1A2 gene which decreases the expression of the cellular gene (see above). A heterozygous mutation of the COL1A2 gene causes the Ehlers-Danlos syndrome type-VII. EDS patients suffer from COL1A2 protein deficiency. Therefore, research on EDS type-VII can be used to gain insights on the effects of a GABP viral infection on animal and human health.
104

(1) EDS is associated with hypermobility of certain joints

The COL1A2 deficiency in EDS type-VII causes hypermobility of joints (Byers 1997366, Giunta 1999367). A hypermobile joint is defined as a joint whose range of movement exceeds the norm for that individual, taking into consideration age, sex, and ethnic background. The primary cause of hypermobility is ligamentous laxity, which is determined by each person’s fibrous protein genes (Grahame 1999368).

A high concentration of collagen type I, 55-65% of dry weight, is found in the matrix components of interarticular fibrocartilages (menisci) tissues. Meniscus tissues are found in the temporomandibular, ternoclavicular, acromiocalvicular, wrist and knee joints. High concentration of collagen type I is also found in connecting fibrocartilages, such as vertebral discs. As a result of COL1A2 deficiency, these joints show a higher degree of hypermobility compared to other joints. We call the temporomandibular, ternoclavicular, acromiocalvicular, wrist, knee and lumbal joints the “Vulnerable Joints.”

(2) Hypermobility in obesity

A latent infection by a GABP virus results in microcompetition between viral DNA and the COL1A2 gene which decreases the expression of COL1A2. A COL1A2 deficiency causes hypermobility in vulnerable joints, specifically, in the lumbar joints. A infection also results in decreased expression of the hMT-IIA gene and obesity (see above). Therefore, obese people should show hypermobility in their lumbar joints.

A modified Schober test was used to examine lumbar mobility. To perform the test, the subjects were first asked to stand erect. While erect, three marks were placed on the subject’s skin overlaying the lumbosacral spine. The first mark was placed at the lumbosacral junction, the second mark was placed 5 cm below the first, and the third mark was placed 10 cm above the junction. The subject was then asked to bend forward as far as possible, as though to touch the toes. The new distance between the second and third mark was measured. Lumbar mobility is defined as the difference between this measurement and the initial distance of 15 cm. The study group included 2,350 men and 670 women between the ages of 21 and 67 years.
Obesity (defined as weight/height) markedly affected the flexibility measurements. For every increase in obesity by one standard deviation, an increase of 0.4 cm was measured in the modified Schober measurement. The results showed that younger subjects are more mobile in their lumbar joints. Female subjects in their 20’s showed an increase of 0.42 cm in the modified Schober measurement compared to female in their 60’s. Man showed a 1.04 cm increase over the same age difference. The increased flexibility demonstrated by the most obese subjects (top 16%, or 1 SD of weight/height subjects) is equal to the increase in flexibility associated with 40 year age difference in female (0.4 cm compared to 0.42 cm), and is almost half the increase associated with that age difference in men (0.4 cm compared to 1.04 cm) (Batti’e 1987).
Microcompetition causes hypermobility which causes osteoarthritis in vulnerable joints. Microcompetition also causes obesity. Therefore, obese people should show osteoarthritis in vulnerable joints.

A study compared the OA disease traits in different joints of female twins aged 48-70. The results showed that, in twins, an increase in the body weight increased the likelihood of developing osteoarthritis in the knee in both the tibiofemoral joint (TFJ) and patellofemoral joint (PFJ) and in the hand in the first carpometacarpal joint (CMC I). Specifically, after adjustment for other potential risk factors, for every 1 kg increase in body weight a twin had a 14% increased risk of developing TFJ osteophytes, a 32% increased risk of developing PFJ osteophytes, and a 10% increased risk of developing CMC osteophytes compared to their co-twin. Moreover, the weight difference was also observed in asymptomatic woman, which indicates that weight gain predates OA and, therefore, is not a result of OA (Cicuttini 1996\textsuperscript{374}).

Note that this twin study demonstrates an association between obesity and OA independent of genetic factors, and is, therefore, inconsistent with the genetic mutation explanation of obesity (see above).

A longitudinal study began in 1962 with baseline examinations of clinical, biochemical, and radiologic characteristics. In 1985 follow-up examination characterized osteoarthritis in 1,276 participants, 588 males and 688 females, ages 50-74. Baseline obesity was measured by an index or relative weight. The results showed that the likelihood of developing osteoarthritis of the hand over the 23 year period increased with an increase in the index measuring baseline relative weight. Higher baseline relative weight was also associated with greater subsequent severity of the disease. Moreover, during the 23 year period, most subjects gained weight. However, after adjustment for baseline weight, the increase in body weight was not associated with either the likelihood of developing osteoarthritis of the hand or the severity of the disease, which indicates that OA is not a result of weight gain (Carman 1994\textsuperscript{375}).

In obesity some joints seem to be susceptible to osteoarthritis while other are protected. The knees and the thumb base, for instance, are often damaged while the hips are disease free. Since both are weight bearing joints, the difference in susceptibility to
osteoarthritis indicates a cause other than mechanical wear-and-tear. The pattern of OA in obesity also does not correspond to a general metabolic cause for the disease. A metabolically induced deterioration of cartilage should result in small differences in the severity of OA between joints, unlike the differences observed in joints of obese people. van Sasse, et al., call the pattern of OA in obesity “strange,” and claims that “whatever the final explanation for the etiology of OA, we believe that it will have to take into account the strange pattern of the association between OA and obesity” (van Saase 1988).

These studies suggest three insights. First, obesity is associated with osteoarthritis in only specific joints - van Saase’s “strange” list of susceptible joints. Second, obesity and osteoarthritis do not a result from of each other. Third, the association between obesity and osteoarthritis is independent of genetic factors. Obesity and OA resulting from microcompetition between viral and cellular DNA is consistent with all three insights. First, van Saase’s “strange” list of susceptible joints coincides with the list of vulnerable joints. Second, both obesity and OA result from microcompetition and not from each other. Last, microcompetition results from a viral infection and not from a genetic mutation.

b) **Collagen type I α2 chain (COL1A2), obesity and obstructive sleep apnea (OSA)**

Obesity is associated with hypermobility of vulnerable joints. The temporomandibular joint belongs to the list of vulnerable joints. Therefore, in obesity the temporomandibular joint is hypermobile.

The mandible and tongue protrusion of obese patients was compared to controls. The subject was asked to protrude the mandible or tongue as far forward as possible (MAX), and 50% was measured as the midpoint between maximum protrusion and the position were the tongue tip is resting between the incisors (50%). The difference between resting position R and MAX and between R and 50%, is denoted R-MAX and R-50%, respectively. The results showed that obese subjects differed from controls in the degree of change in cross-sectional area (CSA) in the oropharynx. The 50% mandibular protrusion (R-50%) and the maximum tongue protrusion (R-MAX) produced greater
relative increases in oropharyngeal cross-sectional area in obese subjects compared to controls (Ferguson 1997377). Increased oropharyngeal cross-sectional area indicates an increased capacity for mandibular protrusion. Such increased capacity indicates hypermobility of the temporomandibular joint.

During sleep, the tonic activity of the masseter decreases. In a supine position the mandible drops and the mouth opens. A hypermobile temporomandibular joint lets the mandibular drop further and the mouth open wider than a normal joint.

A study compared the time spent with mandibular opening in OSA patients and healthy controls. In controls, 88.9% of total sleep time was spent with narrow mandibular opening (less than 5 mm). In contrast, in OSA patients, 69.3% of the total sleep time was spent with wide mandibular opening (more than 5 mm). Moreover, in healthy adults, there was no difference in mandibular posture between the supine and lateral recumbent positions, while in OSA patients, sleep stage affects the mandibular opening during sleep in the supine position only (Miyamoto 1999378).

The abnormal low position of the hypermobile mandibular causes the upper airway disturbances during sleep. Therefore, hypermobility of the temporomandibular joint causes OSA.

Without reference to hypermobility of the temporomandibular joint, Miyamoto, et al., (1999) proposes a similar description of the events leading to apnoeic episodes.

Microcompetition causes obesity. Microcompetition also causes hypermobility of the temporomandibular joint which causes OSA. Therefore, obesity is associated with OSA (note that the OSA patients in Ferguson, et al., (1997379) and Miyamoto, et al., (1999) studies above are obese).
I. Obesity

1. Background

2. The obesity epidemic

"The prevalence of obesity (defined as body mass index $\geq 30$ kg/m$^2$) increased from 12.0% in 1991 to 17.9% in 1998. A steady increase was observed in all states; in both sexes; across age groups, races, education levels; and occurred regardless of smoking status" (Mokdad 1999$^{380}$).

3. Three proposed causes for the epidemic

As proposed throughout the scientific community, the three "classical" causes of the obesity epidemic are increased energy intake, reduced energy expenditure, and genetic mutation.

a) Increased energy intake ("too much food")

Many large scale studies refute the idea that increased energy intake is the cause of obesity. The USDA Nationwide Food Consumption Survey 1977-1988 collected data from over 10,000 individuals. The analysis found that the average fat intake in the United States decreased from 41% to 37% of calorie intake between 1977 and 1988 and the average total energy intake decreased, by 3% in women and by 6% in men. "The reductions in average fat and energy intake were associated with a progressive increase in the prevalence of obesity in the US adult population" (Weinsier 1998$^{381}$).

An even larger study reported similar results based on pooled data from NHANES II and III, USDA Nationwide Food Consumption Survey, Behavioral Risk Factor Survey System, and Calorie Control Council Report (Heini 1997$^{382}$). "In the adult US population the prevalence of overweight rose from 25.4% from 1976 to 1980 to 33.3% from 1988 to 1991, a 31% increase. During the same period, average fat intake, adjusted for total calories, dropped from 41.0% to 36.6%, an 11% decrease. Average total daily calorie intake also tended to decrease, from 1,854 kcal to 1,785 kcal (-4%). Men and women had similar trends. Concurrently, there was a dramatic rise in the percentage of the US
population consuming low-calorie products, from 19% of the population in 1978 to 76% in 1991” (Ibid). The authors conclude that “reduced fat and calorie intake and frequent use of low-calorie food products have been associated with a paradoxical increase in the prevalence of obesity” (Ibid). Similar surveys conducted in Great Britain corroborate these studies.

b) Reduced energy expenditure ("too little exercise")

Many have turned their attention to reduced physical activity as an alternative explanation for the obesity epidemic. “The only available explanation for the paradoxical increase in body weight with a decrease in fat and energy intake is that physical activity declined” (Ibid). The data disprove this explanation as well.

In recent years several population surveys have shown unchanging levels of physical activity among Americans. For example, in the Behavioral Risk Factor Survey which included 30,000 to 80,000 individuals annually, the prevalence of obesity increased from 12% to 17.9% between 1991 and 1998 but physical inactivity did not change substantially (Ibid).

c) Genetic mutation

“The fact that the increased rates of obesity have been observed within the last two decades has been viewed as evidence that genetic factors cannot be held responsible. Indeed, systematic changes of the population-based frequencies of specific alleles predisposing to obesity cannot possibly have occurred within this short time span.” (Hebebrand 2000) A significant change in the human gene pool requires many generations. A genetic mutation explanation for the increase in obesity implies that the human gene pool has changed over a single generation. “Although research advances have highlighted the importance of molecular genetic factors in determining individual susceptibility to obesity, the landmark discoveries of leptin, uncoupling proteins and neuropeptides involved in body weight regulation, cannot explain the obesity epidemic” (Hill 1998). “Genes related to obesity are clearly not responsible for the epidemic of obesity because the gene pool in the United States did not change significantly between 1980 and 1994” (Koplan 1999).
4. Knockout studies

a) Human metallothionein-II\textsubscript{A} (hMT-II\textsubscript{A})

(1) hMT-II\textsubscript{A} is a microcompetition-suppressed gene. A latent infection by a GABP virus results in microcompetition between the viral DNA and the hMT-II\textsubscript{A} gene which decreases the expression of the cellular gene (see above). A disruption of the metallothionein gene in transgenic mice also reduces the expression of the cellular gene. Therefore, research with MT-null mice can produce insights on the effects of a GABP viral infection on animal and human health.

(2) MT-I and MT-II null mice are obese

Mice with disrupted MT-I and MT-II genes are apparently phenotypically normal. The disruption shows no adverse effect on the ability to reproduce and rear offspring. However, after weaning, MT-null mice consume more food and gain more weight at a more rapid rate than control mice. The majority of the adult male mice in the MT-null colony show moderate obesity (Beattie 1998\textsuperscript{386}).

b) Integrin (\(\beta_2\) leukocyte, CD18)

Notations and terminology:

\(\beta_2 = \text{CD18}\)

\(\alpha_L = \text{CD11a (L for Leukocytes) expressed in all leukocytes}\)

\(\alpha_M = \text{CD11b (M for Monocytes/Macrophage) expressed in monocytes/macrophages, granulocytes, natural killer cells, a sub population of T cells}\)

LFA-1 = Lymphocyte-Function-associated Antigens 1

MAC-1 = Macrophage 1

CR3 = Complement Receptor type 3

\(\alpha_L\beta_2 = \text{CD11a/CD18} = \text{LFA-1 (LFA-1 binds ICAM-1 and ICAM-2)}\)
$\alpha_{M^b_2} = CD11b/CD18 = MAC-1 = CR3 = Mo-1$ (MAC-1 binds ICAM-1, C3b, fibrinogen and factor X)

1. **CD18 is a microcompetition-suppressed gene**
   CD18 is a leukocyte-specific adhesion molecule. GABP binds three N-boxes in the CD18 promoter and transactivates the gene (Rosmarin 1995\textsuperscript{387}, Rosmarin 1998\textsuperscript{388}). Since CD18 is a GABP stimulated gene, latent infection by a GABP virus results in microcompetition between the viral DNA and the CD18 promoter thereby decreasing the expression of CD18 (see Le Naour 1997\textsuperscript{389}, Tanaka 1995\textsuperscript{390}, Patarroyo 1988\textsuperscript{391} above). Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in CD18 expression.

2. **ICAM-1 or MAC-1 null mice are obese**
   CD18 participates in forming the CD11a/CD18 molecule which binds ICAM-1. ICAM-1 null mice (ICAM-1 -/-) gain more weight than control mice after 16 weeks of age, and eventually became obese despite no obvious increase in food intake. Under a high fat diet, ICAM-1 -/- mice show an increased susceptibility to obesity. CD18 also participates in forming the CD11b/CD18 molecule which binds MAC-1. MAC-1 null mice (MAC-1 -/-) are also susceptible to diet-induced obesity and exhibited a strong similarity in weight gain with sex-matched ICAM-1 -/- mice (Dong 1997\textsuperscript{392}).

5. **Pathogenesis**

6. **Hormone sensitive lipase (HSL) gene**
   
   a) **HSL is a microcompetition-suppressed gene**
      
      See above.

   b) **Reduced HSL mRNA in obesity**
      
      HSL mRNA, protein expression, and enzyme activity were measured in abdominal subcutaneous adipocytes from 34 obese drug-free and otherwise healthy males and females and 14 non-obese control subjects. The results showed reduced HSL mRNA,
protein expression and enzyme activity (Large 1999\textsuperscript{393}, Table 3). The findings were age and gender independent. Based on these results Large, \textit{et al.}, conclude that "a decreased synthesis of the HSL protein at the transcriptional level is a likely factor behind the findings of decreased HSL expression in adipocytes from obese subjects. ... Decreased HSL expression may at least in part explain the well-documented resistance to the lipolytic effect of catecholamines in obesity."

In line with these results, a subsequent study by the same laboratory showed a 73% reduction in HSL protein levels in obesity (Elizalde 2000\textsuperscript{384}, Fig 4C and Table 1).

\textit{c) Catecholamines resistance in obesity}

(1) HSL regulation

Catecholamines bind $\beta_1$-, $\beta_2$- and $\beta_3$-adrenergic receptors ($\beta_1$AR, $\beta_2$AR and $\beta_3$AR, respectively) and $\alpha_2$ adrenergic receptors ($\alpha_2$AR).

\textit{(a) Transcription}

Activation of $\beta_2$AR (Maudsley 2000\textsuperscript{395}, Pierce 2000\textsuperscript{396}, Elorza 2000\textsuperscript{397}, Luttrell 1999\textsuperscript{398}, Daaka 1998\textsuperscript{399}) or $\beta_3$AR (Cao 2000\textsuperscript{400}, Gerhardt 1999\textsuperscript{401}, Soeder 1999\textsuperscript{402}) activates ERK which phosphorylates GABP which in turn binds p300, resulting in increased HSL transcription.

\textit{(b) Post-translation}

Activation of $\beta_1$AR, $\beta_2$AR, $\beta_3$AR activates a cAMP dependent protein kinase A.

The protein kinase phosphorylates HSL, resulting in increased hydrolytic activity against triacylglycerol and cholesteryl ester substrates. Insulin deactivates HSL via protein phosphatases or inhibition of protein kinase.

(2) Reduced response to stimulation

\textit{(a) Hypothesis}

Microcompetition reduces HSL expression. Since HSL is rate limiting in triacylglycerol and diacylglycerol hydrolysis, microcompetition reduces steady state lipolysis. Moreover, as ERK agents, $\beta_2$AR and $\beta_3$AR agonists, specifically
catecholamines, stimulate HSL transcription. Microcompetition also lessens the increase in HSL transcription, resulting in impaired stimulated lipolysis. Consider figure 24.

At steady state, microcompetition reduces lipolysis per adipocyte. Microcompetition also reduces the slope of the lipolysis line. That is, with increased stimulation, the relative lipolysis deficiency (the vertical difference between the two lines) increases.

A number of in vivo and in vitro studies demonstrated the reduced ability of catecholamines to stimulate lipid mobilization from subcutaneous adipose tissue.

(b) In vitro studies

Hellstrom, et al., (1996) treated abdominal subcutaneous adipocytes from 13 non-obese subjects with at least one first-degree relative with body mass index of 27 kg/m² or more (Hob) and 14 controls (Hnorm) with norepinephrine, a major endogenous lipolytic agent, isoprenaline, a non-selective beta-adrenoceptor agonist, forskolin, a direct activator of adenylyl cyclase, and dibutyryl cyclic AMP, an activator of protein kinase and thereby HSL. Figures 25, 26, 27 and 28 represent the effect of these treatments on the glycerol release (pmol·cell·2h⁻¹) from adipocytes.

The average rate of lipolysis induced by all four treatments was reduced by about 50% (p from 0.001 to 0.01) in subjects with a family trait of obesity compared to controls.

Isoprenaline (Shimizu 1997), dibutyryl cAMP (Shimizu 1997) and forskolin (Yarwood 1996) activated ERK in adipocytes. Isoprenaline also activated ERK in CHO/K1 cells expressing the human β₃AR (Gerhardt 1999). As ERK agents the agonists phosphorylate GABP. Microcompetition in obese adipocytes reduces the maximum number of GABP molecules available for HSL promoter binding. Hence, the observed resistance for these agonists stimulation. Moreover, as expected, an increase in the agonist concentration increased the relative lipolysis deficiency.

Hellstrom, et al., (1996) also measured the HSL maximum activity and HSL mRNA at steady state. The maximum activity was reduced 50% in Hob (p < 0.05).
mRNA (amol HSL/μg total nucleic acids) was reduced by 20% (p > 0.05, not significant). The study did not measure HSL mRNA after stimulation.

The following studies use the concept of maximum adipocyte lipolysis capacity in response to stimulation by various agonists by comparing glycerol release in adipocytes from obese male and female to controls. In all studies the adipocyte incubation in the presence of the agonist lasted 2 h.

Large, et al., (1999807) treated abdominal subcutaneous adipocytes from 34 obese drug-free and otherwise healthy males or females and 14 non-obese controls, with isoprenaline, a non-selective β-adrenergic receptor agonist, or dibutyryl cAMP, a phosphodiesterase resistant cAMP analogue. The results showed reduced maximum values for isoprenaline- and dibutyryl cAMP induced glycerol release by 40-50% in the obese group, when expressed per g lipid.

Hellstrom, et al., (2000810) treated abdominal subcutaneous adipocytes from 60 obese and 67 non obese subjects, age 19-60 y, with isoprenaline, dibutyryl cyclic AMP, and forskolin, an activator of adenylcyclase. The results showed reduced maximum values for isoprenaline-, dibutyryl cAMP-, and forskolin induced glycerol release by 50% in the obese group. Moreover, 42 of the 67 lean subjects had at least one obese member among first degree relatives, but not all family members, and not both parents. The non-obese subject with the family trait for obesity showed a similar reduction in maximum glycerol release compared to lean subjects without the family trait.

(c) In vivo studies

Consider Bougneres 1997809. To study the effect of epinephrine on lipolysis in obesity, epinephrine was infused stepwise at fixed doses of 0.75 and then 1.50 μg/min to 9 obese children (160+/-5% ideal body weight) aged 12.1+/-0.1 yr during the dynamic phase of fat deposition, and in 6 age-matched non-obese children. As an in vivo lipolysis index, the study used glycerol flux. In the basal state, obese children had a 30% lower rate of glycerol release per unit fat mass than lean children. Figure 29 represents the measured relationship between epinephrine infusion and glycerol release.
Consider Horowitz (2000). Lipolytic sensitivity to epinephrine was measured in 8 lean [body mass index (BMI): 21 ± 1 kg/m²] and 10 upper body obese (UBO) women (BMI: 38 ± 1 kg/m²; waist circumference >100 cm). All subjects underwent a four-stage epinephrine infusion (0.00125, 0.005, 0.0125, and 0.025 microgram·kg fat-free mass⁻¹·min⁻¹) plus pancreatic hormonal clamp. Glycerol rates of appearance (Rₚ) in plasma were determined by stable isotope tracer methodology. Figure 30 represents the measured percent change in glycerol release as a function of plasma epinephrine concentration.

Figure 31 represents the same results in terms of total glycerol release per fat mass (FM).

Both the Bougneres (1997) and Horowitz (2000) results are consistent with microcompetition as the underlying cause of catecholamine resistance in obesity.

d) Adipocyte hypertrophy in obesity

HSL is a GABP gene. Microcompetition reduces HSL expression which results in adipocyte hypertrophy. Consider the following study.

HSL knockout mice were generated by homologous recombination in embryonic stem cells. Cholesterol ester hydrolase (NCEH) activities were completely absent from both brown adipose tissue (BAT) and white adipose tissue (WAT) in mice homozygous for the mutant HSL allele (HSL⁻/⁻). The cytoplasmic area of BAT adipocytes was increased 5-fold in HSL⁻/⁻ mice (Osuga 2000₁, Fig 3a). The median cytoplasmic areas in WAT was enlarged 2-fold (Ibid, Fig 3b). The HSL knockout mice showed adipocyte hypertrophy.

Obesity is characterized by adipocyte hypertrophy. Osuga (2000) results are consistent with microcompetition as the underlying cause of adipocyte hypertrophy in obesity.

It is interesting that body weight of the HSL⁻/⁻ mice was not different, at least until 24 weeks of age, from wild-type. The reason was probably lack of adipocyte hyperplasia in HSL⁻/⁻ mice. Consider the following section.
7. Retinoblastoma susceptible gene (Rb)

a) *Rb is a microcompetition-suppressed gene*

See above.

b) *Adipocyte hyperplasia in obesity*

Rb-null (pRb/-) preadipocytes show a higher proliferation rate compared to wild type. A study measured the percentage of pRb/-/ 3T3 cells in S phase following five different treatments, cells grown in DMEM (asynchronous cells, marked A), cells grown to confluence in DMEM containing 10% calf serum and then maintained for 6 days in the same mixture (marked C), confluent cells split into subconfluent conditions (marked CR), confluent cells treated for 6 days with an adipocyte differentiating mixture (marked D), and differentiated cells split into subconfluent conditions (marked DR). The results are summarized in figure 32 (Classon 2000\(^ {412}\), Fig 3A).

Asynchronous pRb(-/-) cells show a tendency for excessive cell replication. Moreover, pRb(-/-) differentiated cells show a higher probability for cell cycle re-entry. It should be emphasized that although pRb seems to affect the establishment of a permanent exit from cell cycle, pRb is not absolutely required since expression of C/EBP\(\alpha\) and PPAR\(\gamma\) bypasses the requirement for pRb and causes pRb(-/-) cells to differentiate into adipocytes (Classon 2000, Fig 1B).

Transcription of the Rb gene increases with growth arrest and differentiation (see above). The relationship between pRb concentration and adipocyte differentiation was tested in a study that compared proliferative and differentiated brown (primary) and white (3T3-F442A) adipocytes in culture. The differentiation stage of the cells was determined following detection of lipid accumulation and expression of the specific differentiation markers aP2 and UCP-1. The results showed almost undetectable pRb levels in proliferative undifferentiated cells. On the other hand, pRb was clearly detected in nuclei of differentiated primary brown adipocytes (Puigserver 1998\(^ {413}\), Fig. 2A) with lipid accumulation in their cytoplasm and UCP-1 expression (Ibid, Fig 3) and in 3T3-F442A cells with lipid accumulation and aP2 expression. Moreover, Puigserver, *et al.*, note that "the pRb levels measured by immunoblotting clearly increased during differentiation of
3T3 F442A cells (Ibid, Fig. 2B)” and that “there was an apparent positive correlation between pRb expression and lipid accumulation, since nuclei from cells with more lipid droplets in their cytoplasm were more strongly immunostained for pRb than those of cells with less lipid droplets (Ibid, Fig. 2A).”

Richon, et al., (1992414) proposed the following model for the relationship between Rb and growth arrest and differentiation (see also above). An inducer increases Rb transcription resulting in higher hypo- and total-pRb concentration. The increase in hypo-pRb prolongs G1. However, the initial increase in hypo-pRb is most likely not sufficient for permanent G1 arrest. Therefore, cells reenter cell cycle for a few more generations.

While cells continue to divide, the increased rate of transcription results in hypo-pRb accumulation. When a critical hypo-pRb concentration, or threshold, is reached, the cells irreversibly commit to terminal differentiation. This model describes the determination of the commitment to differentiate as a stochastic process with progressive increases in the probability of G1/G0 arrest and differentiation established through successive cell divisions. Such a model would predict an increase in the number of cell cycle generations required for producing the threshold Rb concentration, under conditions of suppressed Rb transcription. Consider figure 33.

Microcompetition reduces Rb transcription. Therefore, the number of generations required to reach the required Rb concentration ([Rb]₀) under microcompetition (N_M) is greater than the number in controls (N_C). In obesity, therefore, one should observe excessive replication in vitro (Roncari 1986415, Roncari 1981416) and hyperplasia in vivo.

Returning to the non-obese HSL-/+ mice (Osuga 2000, see above). Both HSL and Rb are microcompetition-suppressed genes. Therefore, both genes show reduced expression in obesity, resulting in adipocyte hypertrophy and hyperplasia. Since Rb transcription is most likely independent of HSL expression, pRb in HSL-/+ mice is not under expressed and adipocytes in HSL-/+ mice are not hyperplastic.
8. Studies in signaling

9. Resistant ERK agents in obesity

The following are ERK agents showing cellular level or patient level resistance in obesity (for definition of cellular and patient level resistance and its relationship to microcompetition, see above).

a) Oxytocin

The oxytocin receptor (OTR) is a GABP gene (see above). Stock, et al., (1989\textsuperscript{417}) tested whether the plasma level of oxytocin was elevated in obese subjects and if so, whether it was affected by weight reduction following gastric banding. Plasma levels of oxytocin were 4-fold higher in the obese subjects than in the control subjects. After the operation, oxytocin levels dropped dramatically, but were still markedly higher than control.

Moreover, obese pregnant women need more oxytocin stimulation of labor. Johnson, et al., found that, compared to a control group matched for age and parity, there was a significantly increased need for oxytocin stimulation of labor in obese patients weighing at least 113.6 kg (250 pounds) during pregnancy (Johnson 1987\textsuperscript{418}).

b) Zinc and Copper

Serum zinc, copper and magnesium levels were measured in healthy and obese children using atomic absorption spectrophotometry. Serum zinc and copper levels of obese children (mean value 102.40 ± 2.78 micrograms/dL mean value 132.34 ± 1.79 micrograms/dL, respectively) were markedly higher than control (mean value 80.49 ± 2.98 micrograms/dL, and mean value 107.58 ± 1.62 micrograms/dL, respectively). Serum copper concentrations were also significantly higher in obese children compared to healthy controls (Yakinci 1997\textsuperscript{419}).

Serum zinc and copper levels were also determined in 140 diabetic patients and 162 healthy controls. A sub group of patients were classified as overweight (greater than 15% relative body weight). Obese patients showed a statistically significant increase in
zinc levels while the copper level positively correlated with the zinc level (D'Ocon 1987). Taneja, et al., (1996) measured the concentration of zinc in hair of obese men and women. The results showed a positive linear correlation between body weight, or body weight/height ratio, and hair zinc concentration. The correlation was stronger in men.

The following hormones and cytokines, which are all GABP kinase agents, also show resistance in obesity.

c) Insulin

Patients with non-insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus (NIDDM) and/or obesity generally suffer from insulin resistance (IR). Interestingly, most NIDDM patients are obese. Ludvik, et al., studied the effect of obesity and NIDDM on insulin resistance. Both lean NIDDM subjects and obese normal subjects were significantly insulin resistant compared to lean normal subjects (Ludvik 1995).

Another study observed kinetic defects in insulin action in insulin resistant nondiabetic obese subjects. Insulin-stimulated glucose disposal was slower to activate and more rapidly deactivated in obese than in normal subjects. Oral glucose tolerance tests (OGTTs) were done in five controls and five obese subjects. While each of the control subjects had normal glucose tolerance, only two obese subjects tested normal for glucose tolerance. The remaining three obese subjects had impaired glucose tolerance. During the OGTT, both glucose and insulin levels were significantly higher in the obese subjects than the controls (Prager 1987).

d) Leptin

The levels of leptin in plasma increases with body weight (body mass index, BMI kg/m²). Plasma leptin levels are higher in females compared to males (Tasaka 1997).

The ob/ob mouse has a mutated ob gene. The deficiency of leptin in the ob/ob mouse produces severe obesity. Contrary to the ob/ob mouse (and the db/db mouse with the mutated leptin receptor), in most obese humans the leptin and leptin receptors genes
are normal. Moreover, except for some rare cases, the level of leptin in obese humans is elevated rather than reduced (Bjorbaek 1999⁴²⁵).

e) Estrone, estradiol

Urinary excretion of estrone (E1), estradiol (E2) and estriol (E3) was measured in obese post-menopausal women before and 6-12 months following participation in a weight loss program. Prior to the weight loss program, there was a significant correlation between estrone, weight and the Quetelet-index of obesity and between estriol and the Quetelet-index (de Waard 1982⁴²⁶).

Serum levels of sex hormones were studied in healthy, white postmenopausal women (mean age 58 years). Extraction, column chromatography, and radioimmunassay were used in combination to measure the serum concentrations of estrone, estradiol, testosterone, and androstenedione. Obesity was a major predictor of estrone and estradiol levels. Obese women had estrone levels 40% higher than nonobese women (Cauley 1989⁴²⁷).

In a subsequent study, Cauley, et al., (1994⁴²⁸) compared sex steroid hormone levels between white and black women 65 years of age or older. The researchers used the same techniques to measure the serum levels of estrone, androstenedione, and testosterone as in the 1989 study. The results showed that black women had significantly higher serum estrone concentrations and markedly lower androstenedione levels compared to white women. There was a corresponding difference in the degree of obesity between the two groups.

f) Interleukin 1β (IL-1β)

Human coronary artery specimens from patients suffering from either coronary atherosclerosis or cardiomyopathy were studied for levels of IL-1β (Galea 1996⁴²⁹). The presence of IL-1β correlated with disease severity. The study discovered that IL-1β protein is elevated in the adventitial vessel walls of atherosclerotic coronary arteries compared to coronary arteries from nonischemic cardiomyopathic hearts.
Serum IL-1β levels were also determined in patients with ischaemic heart disease. The results showed that the mean serum IL-1β concentrations were higher in patients with ischaemic heart disease, in particular in those with minimal coronary artery disease and angina (Hasdai 1996\textsuperscript{430}).

\textbf{g) Interleukin 6 (IL-6)}

Type II diabetes mellitus (non-insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus, NIDDM) is associated with increased blood concentrations of markers of the acute-phase response, including interleukin-6. The combination of hypertriglyceridaemia, low serum HDL-cholesterol concentrations, hypertension, obesity and accelerated atherosclerosis, termed metabolic syndrome X, is often associated with NIDDM. To investigate this association, two groups of Caucasian NIDDM patients were studied. The first group, with any 4 or 5 features of syndrome X, was compared with the second group, with 0 or 1 feature of syndrome X. The groups were matched for age, sex, diabetes duration, glycaemic control and diabetes treatment. Age and sex matched healthy non-diabetic subjects were controls. The results showed a marked increase in serum IL-6 between the three groups. The lowest levels were found in non-diabetic subjects, intermediate levels in NIDDM patients with 0 or 1 feature of syndrome X and the highest levels in NIDDM patients with a 4 or 5 features (Pickup 1997\textsuperscript{431}, Pickup 1998\textsuperscript{432}).

\textbf{h) Tumor necrosis factor α (TNFα)}

Sixty five patients were tested for TNFα levels. The majority of the patients had android obesity, elevated leptin, insulin resistant, coronarographically confirmed microvascular angina pectoris or IHD. Most of the patients suffered from a myocardial infarction with one or more significant stenoses on the epicardial coronary arteries. Fifty percent of the patients had elevated TNFα, and 28% elevated IL-6 (Hrnciar 1999\textsuperscript{433}).

10. \textbf{Non resistant ERK agents in obesity}

Some GABP kinase agents show no resistance. Consider the following cases.
a) **Interleukin 2 β (IL-2β)**

IL-2β is an ERK agent with the receptors, interleukin 2 receptor β chain (IL-2Rβ) and IL-2 receptor γ-chain (γc). Both receptors are stimulated by GABP (Markiewicz 1996, Lin 1993). Microcompetition for GABP reduces transcription of the receptors. Since any control in this pathway has to be downstream from the receptors, microcompetition for GABP diminishes expression of the control. The reduced expression of the control reduces its repressive effect on IL-2β, which elevates the concentration of IL-2β. However, IL-2β itself is a GABP stimulated gene (Avots 1997^434). Therefore, microcompetition also reduces transcription of IL-2β. The combined effect of diminished repression on transcription and diminished transactivation of transcription can result in a decline, increase, or no change in the concentration of IL-2β in obesity.

b) **GM-CSF**

Granulocyte-macrophage colony stimulating factor (GM-CSF) is an ERK agent. One study showed that GM-CSF (20 ng/ml) significantly inhibited neutrophil apoptosis. The inhibition of apoptosis was significantly attenuated by PD98059, an MEK1 specific inhibitor (Klein 2000^435). Another study showed that bone marrow-derived macrophages proliferate in response to GM-CSF. The MEK1 specific inhibitor, PD98059, blocked the GM-CSF stimulated cell proliferation. Moreover, this study showed the time-course of ERK activation by GM-CSF, where maximal activation occurred 5 min after stimulation (Valledor 2000^436).

As a GABP kinase agent one would expect to observe resistance in obesity and obesity related disease. However, the GM-CSF gene is transactivated by ets1 (Thomas 1997^437). Therefore, microcompetition for ets1 can result in either a decline, increase or no change in GM-CSF concentration in obesity and obesity related diseases.

11. **Studies with viruses**

Until recently, the relationship between viral infection and human obesity has been completely ignored.
12. **Human adenovirus 36 (Ad-36)**

   A recent study inoculated chickens and mice with human adenovirus Ad-36. Weight matched groups were inoculated with tissue culture media as non-infected controls. Ad-36 inoculated and uninfected control groups were housed in separate rooms under biosafety level 2 or better containment. The chicken study was repeated three times. The first chicken experiment included an additional weight matched group of chickens that was inoculated with CELO (chick embryo lethal orphan virus), an avian adenovirus. Food intake and body weight were measured weekly. At the time of sacrifice blood was drawn and visceral fat was separated and weighed. Total body fat was determined by chemical extraction of carcass fat. In experiment 1, the results showed that the visceral fat of the Ad-36 chickens was 100% greater than controls (Dhurandhar 2000\textsuperscript{438}, Table 1), in experiment 2, visceral fat was 128% greater than controls (Ibid, Table 3), in experiment 3, visceral fat was 74% greater than control (Ibid, Table 4). In all three experiments there was no difference in food intake or body weight between Ad-36 chickens and controls. Chickens inoculated with CELO virus showed no change in visceral fat. The Ad-36 mice visceral fat was 67% greater than controls and mean body weight was 9% greater. There was no difference in food intake. Sections of the brain and hypothalamus of Ad-36 inoculated animals showed no overt histopathological changes. Ad-36 DNA could be detected in adipose tissue, but not skeletal muscles of randomly selected animals for as long as 16 weeks after Ad-36 inoculation. Based on these results Dhurandhar concluded that “the role of viral disease in the etiology of human obesity must be considered.”

13. **HIV**

   Recently, several studies documented a new syndrome associated with HIV infection termed “lipodystrophy,” or “fat redistribution syndrome” (FRS). The symptoms typical of FRS, such as peripheral lipodystrophy, central adiposity, hyperlipidemia and insulin resistance (for a recent review see Behrens 2000\textsuperscript{439}), are similar to syndrome X symptoms (Engelson 1999\textsuperscript{440}) (Syndrome X is also known as “insulin resistance” or plain “obesity.”) The cause of FRS is unknown. The temporal association between the recognition of FRS and the application of protease inhibitor therapy has led several investigators to conclude that FRS is a result of protease inhibitor therapy. However,
since FRS was also identified in HIV-infected patients who were not taking protease inhibitors, other researchers concluded that FRS might be a characteristic of the HIV infection, only unmasked by prolonged survival associated with protease inhibitors treatment.

HIV is a GABP virus. HIV infection results in microcompetition between virus and the host which leads to obesity. (Moreover, recent studies report that HIV infection is associated with a greater risk of developing atherosclerosis and diabetes mellitus. Atherosclerosis and diabetes mellitus are another two diseases caused by microcompetition.)

J. Microcompetition-like obesity

1. Hypothesis: Genetic mutation, injury, diet or a weak ERK signal

A genetic mutation, injury or diet can result in a deficiency in an ERK agent or ERK receptor. Such deficiency produces a weak ERK signal. A weak ERK signal disrupts the GABP pathway, and therefore, induces microcompetition-like clinical symptoms.

2. Examples

a) Leptin

Homozygous mutations in genes encoding leptin or the leptin receptor lead to early-onset obesity and hyperphagia (Clement 1998). For instance, mutation in the ob (leptin) gene is associated with obesity in the ob/ob mouse.

Obesity in the db/db mouse is associated with mutations in the db (leptin receptor) gene. An alternatively spliced transcript of the leptin receptor encodes a form with a long intracellular domain. The db/db mouse produces this alternatively spliced transcript with a 106 nucleotide insertion that prematurely terminates the intracellular domain.

Moreover, the db/db mouse also exhibits a point mutation (G→T) in the same gene. The long intracellular domain form of the receptor participates in signal transduction and the
inability to produce the long form in db/db mice contributes to their extreme obese phenotype (Chen 1996\textsuperscript{442}).

Obesity in the Zucker fatty (fa/fa) rats is associated with mutations in the fa gene which encodes a leptin receptor. The fa mutation is a missense mutation (269 gln→pro) in the extracellular domain of the leptin receptor. This mutation causes a decrease in cell-surface expression, a decrease in leptin binding affinity, defective signaling to the JAK-STAT pathway and reduced ability to activate transcription of the egr1 promoter (de Silva 1998\textsuperscript{443}). Yamashita, \textit{et al.}, found that by binding to the long form of its receptor, leptin increased the tyrosine phosphorylation of STAT3 and ERK in Chinese hamster ovary (CHO) cells. In CHO cells with a fa mutated receptor, the leptin induced phosphorylation of both STAT3 and ERK was lower (Yamashita 1998\textsuperscript{444}).

ERK complements

Let A and B be two ERK agents. Assume that A is not an ERK receptor for B. Administration of B can alleviate the symptoms associated with a deficiency in A or an ERK receptor for A.

If A is not an ERK receptor for B, B will be called an “ERK Complement” for A. Notice that the relationship is asymmetric. If B is downstream from A, B is an ERK complement for A, while A is not an ERK complement for B.

IL-1β as ERK complement for leptin

A low dose injection of human recombinant IL-1β to gendically obese ob/ob and db/db mice normalized glucose blood levels for several hours (del Rey 1989\textsuperscript{445}). In another study, chronic intracerebroventricular (ICV) microinjection of IL-1β to obese (fa/fa) Zucker rats caused a 66.1% decrease in nighttime food intake (Ilyin 1996\textsuperscript{446}).

Luheshi, \textit{et al.}, (1999\textsuperscript{447}) showed that IL-1β is an ERK receptor for leptin.

However, IL-1β can still be as ERK complement for leptin if leptin is not a receptor for IL-1β (asymmetry of the complement condition).

TNFα as ERK complement for leptin
ICV microinjection of TNFα (50, 100 and 500 ng/rat) to obese (fa/fa) Zucker rats in triplicate decreased short-term feeding (4 hours) by 17%, 20%, and 20%, nighttime feeding (12 hours) by 13%, 14% and 13% and total daily food intake by 11%, 12% and 11%, respectively (Plata Salaman 1997\textsuperscript{448}).

LPS as ERK complement for leptin

Administration of LPS (0.1, 1, 10, 100 μg) to db/db mice induced a significant decrease in food intake (25%, 40%, 60%, 85%, respectively, in the first 24 hours post injection). The effect on ob/ob mice was similar (Faggioni 1997\textsuperscript{449}).

b) Insulin

A mutation in the insulin receptor substrate-1 (IRS-1) is a risk factor for coronary artery disease (CAD). Insulin resistance is correlated with a higher risk of atherosclerosis. Insulin receptor substrate-1 (IRS-1) is a key component of tissue insulin sensitivity. A mutation (G972R) of the IRS-1 gene, which reduces IRS-1 function and has been connected to decreased sensitivity to insulin, was studied to see if it had any role in predisposing individuals to coronary artery disease (CAD). In this study, CAD patients had a much higher incidence of the mutation than the control group (18.9% versus 6.8%, respectively). The relative risk of CAD associated with the mutation increased in the obese patients and patients with a cluster of abnormalities of insulin resistance syndrome. These results indicate that the G972R mutation in the IRS-1 gene is a strong independent predictor of CAD. In addition, this mutation significantly enhanced the risk of CAD in both obese patients and in patients with clinical features of the insulin resistance syndrome (Baroni 1999\textsuperscript{450}).

c) Transforming growth factor-β (TGFβ)

Mutations in the TGFβ receptor type II gene are associated with various cancers. Several human gastric cancer cell lines were studied for genetic abnormalities in the TGFβ type II receptor gene. Deletion of the type II receptor gene in two of eight cell lines, and amplification of the gene in another two lines, was detected in Southern blots. Other abnormalities in the gastric cancer cells resistant to the growth inhibitory effect of
TGFβ included expression of either truncated or undetectable TGFβ type II receptor mRNAs. The one cell line not resistant to the growth inhibitory effect of TGFβ showed no abnormalities in type II receptor gene (Park 1994\textsuperscript{451}). Mutation of the TGFβ receptor type II gene is characteristic of colon cancers with microsatellite instability or replication errors (RER+). Specific mutations in a polyadenine repeat of the TGFβ type II receptor gene are common in both RER+ colon cancers and RER+ gastric cancers (Myeroff 1995\textsuperscript{452}).

Mutations in the TGFβ receptor type II gene are also associated with atherosclerosis. High fidelity PCR and restriction analysis was adapted to analyze deletions in an A10 microsatellite within the TGFβ receptor type II gene. DNA from human atherosclerotic lesions, and cells grown from lesions, showed acquired 1 and 2 bp deletions in TGFβ receptor type II gene. The mutations could be identified within specific patches of the lesion, while surrounding tissue, or unaffected arteries, exhibited the wild-type genotype. This deletion causes loss of receptor function, and thus, resistance to the antiproliferative and apoptotic effects of TGFβ1 (McCaffrey 1997\textsuperscript{453}).

A deficiency in the TGFβ receptor type II gene causes osteoarthritis. An overexpressed TGFβ cytoplasmically truncated type II receptor competes with the cellular receptors for complex formation, thereby acting as a dominant-negative mutant receptor. Transgenic mice expressing the dominant-negative mutant receptor in skeletal tissue developed progressive skeletal degeneration. The pathology strongly resembled human osteoarthritis. This controled expriment in mice shows that a weak TGFβ signal leads to the development of degenerative joint disease similar to osteoarthritis in humans (Serra 1997\textsuperscript{454}).

d) \textit{Estrone and estradiol}

The ovaries in polycystic ovary syndrome (PCOS) produce less estradiol in response to follicle-stimulating hormone (Caruso 1993\textsuperscript{455}). PCOS is associated with high blood pressure, hyperinsulimia, insulin resistance and obesity.

Ovariectomy reduces the concentration of estradiol, sometimes to undetectable levels (Wronski 1987\textsuperscript{456}). Ovariectomy is also associated with obesity.
129

e) **Zinc and Copper**

Singh, *et al.*, (1998\textsuperscript{457}) surveyed 3,575 subjects, aged 25 to 64 years. The results showed that the prevalence of coronary artery disease (CAD), diabetes and glucose intolerance is associated with lower intake of dietary zinc. In addition, hypertension, hypertriglyceridemia and low high-density lipoprotein cholesterol levels increased as zinc intake decreased.

f) **Metallothionein-null**

Metallothionein is a receptor of the ERK agent zinc. After weaning, MT-null mice consumed more food and gained more weight at a more rapid rate than control mice. The majority of the adult male mice in the MT-null colony showed moderate obesity (Beattie 1998\textsuperscript{458}).

g) **CD18-null**

Chinese hamster ovary (CHO) fibroblast cell lines were engineered to express the CD11a/CD18 or CD11b/CD18 antigens. These cell lines were induced with LPS. Otherwise LPS-nonresponsive fibroblasts became responsive to LPS upon heterologous expression of CD11a/CD18 and CD11b/CD18 (Flaherty 1997\textsuperscript{459}). CD11c/CD18 also activated cells after binding to LPS (Ingalls 1995\textsuperscript{460}). In another study, both wild type CD11b/CD18 and mutant CD11b/CD18 lacking the cytoplasmic domains still transmitted a signal in response to LPS (Ingalls 1997\textsuperscript{461}). Although full length CD11b/CD18 is needed for productive phagocytic signals, LPS activation does not require the cytoplasmic domains. Perhaps CD11b/CD18 activates cells by presenting LPS to a downstream signal transducer (Ingalls 1997). These studies indicate that CD11a/CD18 and CD11b/CD18 are receptors of the ERK agent LPS.

CD11a/CD18 binds the intercellular adhesion molecule-1 (ICAM-1). ICAM-1 null mice (ICAM-1 \(-/-\)) gained more weight than control mice after 16 weeks of age, and eventually became obese despite no obvious increase in food intake. ICAM-1 \(-/-\) mice also showed an increase susceptibility to develope obesity under a high fat diet.
CD11b/CD18 binds macrophage 1 (MAC-1). MAC-1 null mice (MAC-1 -/-) were also susceptible to diet-induced obesity, and exhibited a strong similarity in weight gain with sex-matched ICAM-1 -/- mice (Dong 1997).  

3. Stroke  

K. Stroke  

1. Introduction  

Stroke (cerebrovascular accident, CVA) is cardiovascular disease resulting from disrupted blood flow to the brain due to occlusion of a blood vessel (ischemic stroke) or rupture of a blood vessel (hemorrhagic stroke). Interruption in blood flow deprives the brain of oxygen and nutrients, resulting in cell injury in affected vascular area of the brain. Cell injury leads to impaired or lost function of body parts controlled by the injured cells. Such impairment is usually manifested as paralysis, speech and sensory problems, memory and reasoning deficits, coma, and possibly death.  

The two types of ischemic strokes, cerebral thrombosis and cerebral embolism, are most common, accounting for about 70-80 percent of all strokes. Cerebral thrombosis, the most common type of stroke, occurs when a blood clot (thrombus) forms blocking blood flow in an artery supplying blood the brain. Cerebral embolism occurs when a wandering clot (an embolus) or another particle forms in a blood vessel away from the brain, usually in the heart. The clot is carried by the bloodstream until it lodges in an artery supplying blood to the brain blocking the flow of blood.  

2. Microcompetition and stroke  

Microcompetition causes atherosclerosis. Like coronary artery occlusion, atherosclerosis in arteries leading blood to the brain (such as carotid artery) or in the brain may result in arterial occlusion through plaque formation or plaque rupture and in situ formation of a thrombus (see chapter on atherosclerosis above). Lammie (1999) reports observations supporting similar pathogenesis in coronary artery disease (CAD) and stroke.
In general, numerous studies report the association between atherosclerosis and stroke (see, for instance, Chambless 2000\textsuperscript{464}, O'Leary 1999\textsuperscript{465}).

In addition, microcompetition increases TF expression on circulating monocytes. Monocytes originate from CD34+ progenitor cells (Hart 1997\textsuperscript{466}, Fig 3). CD34+ cells are permissive for a GABP viral infection. For instance, Zhuravskaya, et al., (1997\textsuperscript{467}) demonstrated that human cytomegalovirus (HCMV), a GABP virus, persisted in infected bone marrow (BM) CD34+ cells (see also, Maciejewski and St Jeor 1999\textsuperscript{468}, Sindre 1996\textsuperscript{469}). The infection of CD34+ with a GABP virus increases TF expression on circulating monocytes. Such excessive TF expression in stroke patients was documented in a few studies (see, for instance, Kappelmayer 1998\textsuperscript{470}). The excessive TF expression increases the probability of coagulation and formation of an embolus.

L. Autoimmune disease

1. Conceptual building blocks

   a) T-cell deletion vs. retention and Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation

Dendritic cells (DC) and macrophages are professional antigen presenting cells (professional APC). For simplicity, the text uses the symbol DC to represent both types of professional APC.

DC bind T cells. Figure 34 illustrates some of the molecules on the surface of DC and T cells participating in this binding.

Strength of DC and T-cell binding, denoted [DC•T], is a positive function of B7 concentration on surface of DC, denoted [B7], a negative function of CTLA4Ig concentration on surface of T-cell, denoted [CTLA4Ig], and a positive function of concentration of the major histocompatibility complex (MHC) bound to antigen on DC, denoted [Ag]. The following formula present these relationships.

\[
[DC•T] = f([B7], [CTLA4Ig], [Ag])
\]

\[\begin{array}{ccc} (+) & (-) & (+) \end{array}\]
An (+) sign under [B7] means a positive relationship, that is, an increase in B7 surface concentration increases the strength of DC and T-cell binding. A (-) sign under a variable indicates a negative relationship.

We assume a greater than zero rate of substitution between [B7] and [Ag], that is, increase in [B7] can compensate, to a certain degree, for decrease in [Ag], and vise versa.

[DC\bullet T] determines CD8+ retention vs. deletion and Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation.

(1) Increase in [DC\bullet T] increases the probability of peripheral CD8+ retention vs. deletion
Low [DC\bullet T] leads to peripheral CD8+ proliferation and deletion. The deletion is specific for the antigen presented on MHC. High [DC\bullet T] results in peripheral CD8+ proliferation and retention. T-cells do not differentiate between self or foreign antigen. They respond only to [DC\bullet T].

Define antigen specific peripheral tolerance as deletion of T-cells specific for this antigen. Using this term, it can be said that low [DC\bullet T] induces tolerance.

(2) Increase in [DC\bullet T] increases the probability of Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation
T helper lymphocytes can be divided into two subsets of effector cells based on their function and the cytokines they produce. The Th1 subset of CD4+ T cells secretes cytokines usually associated with inflammation, such as interleukin 2 (IL-2), interleukin 12 (IL-12), interferon \( \gamma \) (IFN\( \gamma \)) and Tumor necrosis factor \( \beta \) (TNF\( \beta \)), and induces cell-mediated immune responses. The Th2 subset produces cytokines such as interleukin 4 (IL-4), interleukin 5 (IL-5), interleukin 6 (IL-6), interleukin 10 (IL-10), and interleukin 13 (IL-13), which help B cells to proliferate and differentiate and is associated with humoral-type immune responses (see recent review Constant 1997\(^{671} \)).

In relevant physiological conditions, low [DC\bullet T] induces CD4+ differentiation into Th2 while high [DC\bullet T] induces Th1 differentiation. [B7] and [Ag] increase [DCT] (see formula above). Therefore, increase in either [B7] or [Ag], increases the probability of Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation. This concept is represented in figure 35.
The results in Rogers and Croft (1999\textsuperscript{472}) support such a relationship. Naive CD4 cells were stimulated with varying doses of moth cytochrome c (MCC) presented on splenic APC and cultured for 4 or 12 days. An equivalent number of surviving T cells was restimulated with a single dose of Ag and assayed for secretion of Th1 and Th2 cytokines. The results showed that the length of differentiation period (4 or 12 days) affects the cytokine profile induced by varying doses of native peptide (Rogers and Croft 1999\textsuperscript{473}). Overall, after 12 days of differentiation, lower doses of high affinity peptides produced T-cells mostly secreting Th2 cytokines. In contrast, higher doses of high affinity peptides resulted in more T-cells secreting Th1 cytokines. These, and other results, were summarized by Roger and Croft in a figure (Ibid, Fig 7) almost identical to the figure above. (The figure for T-cells after 4 days in culture is different. However, since autoimmune disease is a chronic condition, extended exposure to APC seem to be a better description of the CD4+ T-cells in vivo environment)

\textit{b)} \textit{Increase in probability of antigen internalization increases [Ag] and [B7]}

An antigen is a molecule that induces an internalization response in DC (phagocytosis, cell engulfment, etc). Cell debris, apoptotic cells, foreign proteins, etc. are antigens, that is, activate an internalization response by DC.

An increase in the concentration of internalized antigens stimulates antigen processing and presentation on DC surface, or [Ag]. The increase in the concentration of internalized antigens also increases [B7], or costimulation (see, for instance, Rovere 2000\textsuperscript{474} and Rovere 1998\textsuperscript{473} for observation consistent with this concept).

Consider a stationary DC. Increase in antigen concentration in the DC environment increases the DC probability of antigen internalization. Consider a DC migrating through an environment with fixed antigen concentration. Slower DC migration increases the DC probability of antigen internalization. Therefore, both increase in antigen concentration in the cell environment, and decrease in the cell migration speed, increase [Ag] and [B7].

Assume an increase in concentration of internalized antigens decreases cell migration speed. The decrease in migration speed amplifies a small increases in antigen
concentration in the DC environment into a large increases in [Ag] and [B7]. Such amplification increases the sensitivity of DC to its environment.

c) **Chemokines carry a homing signal for T-cells and circulating professional APCs**

A source DC releases chemokines. The chemokines direct activated T-cell and more DC to the source. The steering of T-cells and new DC is most effective when the source DC is stationary (otherwise, T-cells and new DC need to chase a moving target).

Some of the chemokines secreted by DC are RANTES (regulated upon activation, normal T cell expressed and secreted), MIP-1α, MIP-1β (macrophage-inflammatory protein-1α and 1β). CCR5 is a receptor for these chemokines variably expressed on monocytes, activated T cells, natural killer cells, and dendritic cells.

d) **Cytotoxic T lymphocytes (CTL)**

Assume a stationery source DC releasing chemokines. Antigen specific CTL enter the tissue near the stationary DC and bind and destroy all target cells, that is, cells which present the specific antigen on their MHC. The target cells include the stationary DC and all tissue cells which present the antigen.

2. **Model**

Damaged tissue is defined as tissue showing abnormal morphology. Tolerance, activation and autoimmune disease are defined as immune dynamics which result in no tissue damage, reversible, or self correcting tissue damage, and irreversible tissue damage, respectively. Note that these definitions are different from acute vs. chronic immune activation.

The following sections present a model which describes the conditions inducing tolerance, activation and autoimmune disease.
a) Tolerance

Tolerance is defined as immune dynamics which result in no tissue damage. Consider the following dynamics.

Terminology: In the atherosclerosis chapter foam cell migration back to
circulation was called backward motility. Since backward motility essentially means out
of tissue migration, this text uses the same term to describe DC migration from tissue to
lymph vessel.

DC continuously enter tissues. In tissue, the cells collect, process and present
antigens on MHC. Internalized antigens induce oxidative stress, which decreases binding
of GABP to the tissue factor (TF) promoter, resulting in increased TF expression (see
effect of GABP on TF expression above in atherosclerosis chapter). TF propels DC
backward motility, that is migration out of tissue and into a lymph vessel. Since backward
motility takes a relatively short time, the DC entering the lymph vessel show only a small
increase in [B7]. Moreover, under normal conditions, the concentration of antigens in the
DC migration path is low. As a result, the DC entering the lymph vessel also show low
[Ag]. In the draining lymph node, DC bind naive T-cells expressing T-cell receptors
(TCR) which match the presented antigens. Since [B7] and [Ag] are low, [DC•T] is low
(see formula above). As a result, the bound T-cells proliferate and die.

b) Immune activation

Activation is defined as immune dynamics which result in reversible tissue
damage.

(1) The "slow DC" model

Consider a tissue with excessive local production of an antigen. For simplicity, let
the antigen originate from a single cell, called the origin. Antigen concentration near the
origin is not uniform. Some regions contain "normal," or low, concentrations, other
contain moderate concentrations, yet other contain high antigen concentrations. Consider
three dendritic cells DC_A, DC_B, and DC_C. DC_A, DC_B, and DC_C migrate through the regions
of "normal," moderate, and high antigen concentrations, respectively. Higher antigen
concentration results in higher rate of antigen internalization, faster increase in cellular
free radicals and faster increase in TF expression (oxidative stress reduces the binding of GABP to the TF gene and increases its transcription, see above). Consider figure 36.

TF activity, marked $a_{TF}$, is a function of surface TF concentration. A faster increase in TF concentration moves the $a_{TF}$ graph to the left (the atherosclerosis chapter discusses the shape of the $a_{TF}$ curve and the relationship between $a_{TF}$ and TF surface concentration). Assume the speed of DC migration in tissue can be represented as a linear function of $a_{TF}$. Then, the distance traveled by a DC is equal to the integral of its $a_{TF}$ function from $t_0$, the time the cell starts backward motility, to the time the DC leaves the tissue and enters a lymphatic vessel. Consider DC$_A$. DC$_A$ starts to migrate at time $t_0$ and at time $t_1$ (point 2) reaches the lymphatic vessel. The area under curve A from point 1 to point 2 is equal to the distance traveled by DC$_A$. Mark this area with $\int_{t_0}^{t_1} A \, dx$. Consider DC$_B$. Curve B represents a faster increase in TF concentration on the DC. To reach the lymphatic vessel, DC$_B$ must travel the same distance as DC$_A$. However, DC$_B$ needs a longer time to travel this distance, or $t_2 > t_1$. At time $t_1$, the distance traveled by DC$_B$ is represented by the area under curve B defined by points 3 and 5, or $\int_{t_0}^{t_1} B \, dx$. This area is only part of the area under curve A defined by points 1 and 2, in symbols, $\int_{t_0}^{t_1} B \, dx < \int_{t_0}^{t_1} A \, dx$.

To increase the area, or distance travels by DC$_B$, $t_2$ must be greater than $t_1$. See the area defined by points 3 and 4 in the figure. Does every DC reach the lymphatic vessel? To answer this question assume that every $a_{TF}$ greater than $a_{TF_{stop}}$ propels migration. DC$_B$ spends a longer time migrating, however, the cell reaches the lymphatic vessel. In comparison, to successfully reach the lymphatic vessel, DC$_C$ must spend an even longer time on the (same) road. In the figure, this time is marked by $t_3$. This extra time is prevents the cell from reaching the lymphatic vessel. According to the figure, to reach the lymphatic vessel, DC$_C$ depends on TF activities that no longer propel migration. All $a_{TF}$ between points 8 and 7 are bellow $a_{TF_{stop}}$. DC$_C$ ends up trapped in tissue. Moreover, the higher the concentration of antigen in the DC environment, the less is the distance traveled by the cell, and the nearer the cell’s final resting site relative to the origin.
Consider insulin producing β cells as an example for tissue in the “slow DC” model above. Assume β cells are induced to increase their production of antigens, resulting in an increase in the concentration of antigens in the DC migratory path. Such an increase might result from injury, infection, transgene expression, etc (see examples below). Since, in most cases, antigen production involves apoptosis, we call this initial event “trigger apoptosis.” For simplicity, let trigger apoptosis be self limiting. The curve illustrating the number of apoptotic β cells over time is bell shaped (see following figure). If we assume that every β cell produces the same concentration of antigens, this curve can also represent the antigen concentrations in the DC environment.

DC continuously migrate through the pancreas. As a result of the excessive production of autoantigen, some DC internalize more antigens and begin to slow down, which further increases their antigen internalization. A few slower migrating DC reach the lymph vessel (DC\textsubscript{B} above) and than the draining lymph node where they present higher [Ag] and [B7] to T-cells inducing proliferation and retention. Other slower migrating DC end up trapped in the tissue (DC\textsubscript{C} above). These cells release chemokines which direct activated T-cells to the site of excessive antigen production. The chemokines also direct more DC to the same site which amplifies the initial reaction. Infiltrating T-cell bind trapped DC and β cells inducing a second wave of apoptosis. The T-cell induced apoptosis decreases the number of trapped DC, the production of DC chemokines, the infiltration of T-cells and new DC, returning immune dynamics to tolerance. Since the T-cell induce apoptosis is self limiting, it is represented in figure 37 with a bell shape curve.

Overall, the number of viable β cells is equal the initial number of β cells minus the total number of apoptotic cells (initial number of β cells - trigger apoptosis - T-cell induced apoptosis). In figure 37, the sum of apoptotic cells is represented by the curve 0,1,2,3 and the corresponding “number of viable β cells” curve is illustrated in the top half of the figure. Note that the peak of the “sum curve” corresponds to the turn in the S shape of the “number of viable β cells” curve, and the end of the “sum curve” corresponds to the minimum point on the “number of viable β cells” curve (see dotted arrows). The right hand side of the “number of viable β cells” curve illustrates β cell neogenesis. Note that
the final number of viable \( \beta \) cell is equal the initial number, and therefore, at termination tissue damage is reversed.

\[ (3) \text{ The "two peak" dynamics} \]

Assume an increase in trigger apoptosis. How does the two peak system respond to such a change? Consider figure 38.

The increase in trigger apoptosis produces more antigens. DC internalize more antigens. The excess oxidative stress increases TF surface expression. DC migration to the lymph node is slower, and therefore, T-cell activation is delayed. However, when DC eventually reach the lymph node, they present higher [Ag] and [B7], and, therefore, activate more T-cells (higher probability for activation and retention rather than activation and deletion). Moreover, more DC are trapped in the tissue. These cells produce more chemokines and chemotactate more T-cell which infiltrate the tissue producing higher rate of apoptosis. Overall, the increase in trigger apoptosis shifts the second peak right and up.

c) \text{Autoimmune disease}

\[ (1) \text{ The "excessively slow DC" model} \]

Autoimmune disease is defined as immune dynamics which produce irreversible tissue damage, or abnormal tissue morphology.

Consider a situation where an exogenous disruption (local or systematic) slows DC backward motility. These DC will be called "excessively slow." Since TF propels backward motility, a disruption which decreases or increases TF surface concentration (both directions have the similar effects because of TF encryption, see the atherosclerosis chapter above) can produce excessively slow DC. Consider figure 39.

The disruption shifts the second peak to the right. As with increased trigger apoptosis, DC migration to the lymph node is slower, which result in a shift of the second peak right and up. The sum of \( \beta \) cell apoptosis in this case is represented by the two peak curve \((0,4,5,6,7)\). The question is what is the shape of the corresponding "number of viable \( \beta \) cells" curve? Excessive \( \beta \) cell apoptosis induces excessive tissue damage. If tissue regeneration capacity is limited, there exist a level of \( \beta \) cell apoptosis which result
in permanent reduction in the number of viable β cells. Note that in the figure above, the corresponding “number of viable β cells” curve shows complete destruction of β cells. Under limited regeneration capacity, such damage is irreversible, and, therefore, describes autoimmune disease.

3. Predictions and evidence

The studies described in the following section use different interventions. In terms of the two peak model, these interventions decrease or increase trigger apoptosis, excessively slow DC backward motility, etc. The following sections compares the predicted effects of such interventions with the actual reported responses.

a) Animal models

The expression of cellular molecule, M, in a tissue cell C (C is not a DC) is called “excessively high” if the normal process of antigen production in C causes autoimmune disease.

Some transgenic animals are designed to express a foreign gene (see examples below). Since cells show variable transgene expression, it likely that some cells show high transgene expression (and others low expression). Since excessively high transgene expression produces an autoimmune disease, we call the cells with high transgene expression “immune susceptible cells.” The situation of autoimmune disease in transgenic animals without further intervention is sometimes called “spontaneous” (see examples below). Using this term, it can be said that, in transgenic animals, the immune susceptible cells show a high probability for spontaneous destruction.

(1) Tolerance dynamics

A recent review summarizes many observation relating to issues of ignorance and tolerance (Heath 1998476). Based on these observations Heath, et al., concluded that "taken together, there is compelling evidence that in order to maintain self-tolerance a specialized APC is capable of capturing tissue antigens, transporting them to the lymphoid compartment, i.e., the draining lymph nodes, and presenting them to both naive CD4+ and CD8+ T cells. ... This APC appears to be capable of processing exogenous antigens into
class I and class II pathways. ... The above data argue for the existence of a “professional” APC that constitutively induces tolerance to antigens expressed in extralymphoid tissues. ... In studies using transgenic mice expressing different levels of OVA in the pancreas, we have recently found that antigen concentration is critical in determining whether such antigens are cross-presented in the draining lymph nodes. ... The level of antigen expression appears to determine whether an antigen induces cross-tolerance or is ignored by naive T cells. ... It is interesting to note that deletion of both CD4+ and CD8+ T cells is preceded by a period of proliferation, suggesting that the APC responsible for tolerance induction must be capable of activating T cells into proliferative cycles. Moreover, the APC is a cell capable of trafficking from peripheral tissues to draining lymph node. Even more importantly for CD8+ T cell tolerance, this APC must be capable of capturing exogenous antigens and cross-presenting them in class I pathway. Various cells types have been shown to have the capacity to cross present exogenous antigens in vitro, including myeloid-derived DCs, macrophages, and B cells.”

Unlike the factors regulating the balance between tolerance and ignorance, the factors determining the choice between tolerance and priming are not well understood. According to Heath, et al., what determines the choice between tolerance and priming “is probably one of the outstanding questions at the moment.” According to Sallusto and Lanzavecchia (1999477) in another recent review: “finding the factors that regulate the balance between tolerance and response is now considered the holy grail of immunology.”

(2) Two peaks

(a) O'Brien 1996

An intervention induces trigger apoptosis in insulin producing β cells. According to the two peak model, if the trigger apoptosis is substantial, such intervention should produce two peak apoptosis and substantial decrease in the number of viable β cells.

Five to six week old male C57B1/6 mice were injected low-dose (40 mg/kg body weight) streptozotocin (stz) per day for five consecutive days. Two peaks in the incidence of β cell apoptosis occurred. The first peak at day 5, which corresponded to an increase in blood glucose concentration, and the second at day 11, when lymphocytic islet infiltration (insulitis) was maximal (O'Brien 1996478, Fig. 3 and 4. See figure 40).
Insulitis did not begin until day 9, by which time treated animals had developed overt diabetes. β-cell apoptosis preceded the appearance of T-cells in the islets and continued throughout the period of insulitis. This study supports the two peak model were the first peak is trigger apoptosis and the second is T-cell induced apoptosis.

(b) O'Brien 2000

An intervention increases oxidative stress in β cells and dendritic cells. Pancreatic islets are especially susceptible to oxidative stress. A study showed that low gene expression of the antioxidant enzymes superoxide dimutase (SOD), catalase, and glutathione peroxidase in pancreatic islets compared with various other mouse tissues (Lenzen 1996479). Moreover, induction of cellular stress by high glucose, high oxygen, and heat shock treatment did not affect antioxidant enzyme expression in rat pancreatic islets or in RINm5F insulin-producing cells (Tiedge 1997480). Based on these results Tiedge, et al., concluded that “insulin-producing cells cannot adapt the low antioxidant enzyme activity levels to typical situations of cellular stress by an upregulation of gene expression.” The oxidative stress inducing intervention should, therefore, result in trigger apoptosis. According to the two peak model, if the trigger apoptosis is substantial, such intervention produces two peak apoptosis and substantial decrease in the number of viable β cells.

In mice, the first 3 postnatal weeks are characterized by marked changes in the activities of enzymes that protect against oxidative stress (glutathione peroxidase/reductase, catalase and superoxide dismutase), relative to older mice (Herman 1990481). It should be noted that Herman, et al., measured the expression of these enzymes in liver, lung and kindney tissues. However, let assume that DC in 3 week old mice are also protected against oxidative stress, and that β cell show a much lower level of protection (reasonable assumption in light of Tiedge, 1997 above). In such a case, according to the two peak model, oxidative stress in 3 week old mice should induce trigger apoptosis with a smaller shift to the right of the second peak, relative to older mice. Moreover, if the trigger apoptosis is also smaller in 3 week mice relative to older mice, it is possible that the sum of β cell apoptosis will show a single peak.
Finally, older mice treated with antioxidant and then oxidant should show attenuated two peaks.

Consider the results in the following study. A study administered a single intraperitoneal injection of cyclophosphamide (CY, 150 mg/kg body weight) to 3 and 12 week old male non-obese diabetic (NOD/Lt) mice. The study also administered, to another group of 12 week old mice, a single intraperitoneal injection of nicotinamide (NA, 500 mg/kg body weight) followed 15 minutes later by a single CY injection. The effect of these treatments on β cell apoptosis is presented in figure 41 (O'Brien 2000, Fig 3).

The total number of apoptotic β cells were observed within the islets of Langerhans in haematoxylin and eosin-stained sections of the pancreata in all three groups harvested from 8 h until 14 days following treatment. However, the shape of the three curves representing the sum of β cell apoptosis is different. The 3 week mice under CY treatment show a single peak, the 12 week mice under CY show a two peak curve, and the 12 week mice under NA/CY show attenuated two peaks.

Since CY injection induces oxidative stress and NA is an antioxidant, these results support the predictions of the two peak model.

(c) Hotta 1998

An intervention produced transgenic NOD mice (Tg) that overexpress thioredoxin (TRX), a redox-active protein, in β cells. The increased protection against oxidative stress reduces trigger apoptosis. According to the two peak model, reduced trigger apoptosis, shifts the second peak left and down. Consider figure 42.

Moreover, for simplicity, let assume that overt diabetes associates with destruction of a certain, fixed number of β cells (in reality, it is actually a range and not fixed number). This number is represented by the sum of the areas (integrals) under the two peaks. In the figure, the added area is restricted by dashed lines marked T1 and T2. Consider areas A, B, C and D. To represent the same number of apoptotic cells, A + C should be equal to B + D. The smaller the size of area B the larger the size of area D, or the delay in onset of diabetes. Let the distance between points 1 and 2 indicate the size of area B. A small
distance indicates a small area B, and therefore, predicts a substantial delay in onset of diabetes.

Consider the results of the following study. The average insulitis score of 12-wk-old female NOD transgenic mice and their female TRX negative littermates were 1.63±0.32 and 1.57±0.26 (mean SEM), respectively (Hotta 1996\textsuperscript{483}). Although, the difference is statistically insignificant, the TRX Tg score is a little higher than the Non Tg score, as predicted by the model. Moreover, the small difference, indicates a small area B, and therefore, a delay in onset of diabetes. As predicted, the first observed onset of diabetes was delayed from week 14 in Non Tg to week 23 in TRX Tg. Moreover, TRX Tg mice showed a markedly reduced cumulative incidence of diabetes at week 32 compared to Non Tg (Ibid, Fig 4).

Similar observations are reported in Kubish 1997\textsuperscript{484}.

Numerous other studies showed reduced insulitis and delayed diabetes in NOD mice following treatment with antioxidants, such as, nicotinamide (vitamin B3) (Kim 1997\textsuperscript{485}, Reddy 1990\textsuperscript{486}), vitamin E (Beales 1994), lipoic acid (Faust 1994\textsuperscript{487}), U78518F (Rabinovitch 1993\textsuperscript{488}).

Cycolosporin reduces TF expression, therefore, reduces DC trapping and diabetes in NOD (Mori 1986\textsuperscript{489}) and BB Wistar rats (Laupacas 1983\textsuperscript{490}).

(3) Autoimmune disease

According to the "slow DC" model of autoimmune disease, an intervention that induces high expression of autoantigen on DC, and too little or too much expression of tissue factor (TF), produces tissue damage.

Presentation of high autoantigen concentration can result from transfection, immunization with autoantigen, increased apoptosis, etc. Insufficient TF surface concentration can result from, for instance, inhibition of TF transcription. Excessive TF expression can result from excessive antigen endocytosis (through oxidative stress), microcompetition, CD40L treatment, LPS treatment, etc. Consider the following studies.
(a) Studies with lymphocytic choriomeningitis virus (LCMV)

(i) LCMV characteristics

Let assume that LCMV is a GABP virus. This assumption is consistent with the following evidence. The glycoprotein (GP) protomer of the lymphocytic choriomeningitis virus (LCMV) has two N-boxes at positions (-44,-38) and (-3,+3). The distance between the two N-boxes is 35 bp. Of the dozens of known ETS factors, only GABP, as a tetrameric complex, binds two N-boxes. Typically, the N-boxes are separated by multiples of 0.5 helical turns (HT) (see discussion and references in the hormone sensitive lipase (HSL) gene above). There are 10 bp per HT. The 35 bp, or 3.5 helical turns separating the N-boxes in the GP promober are consistent with characteristic GABP heterotetramer binding.

LCMV ARM 53b strain establishes a persistent infection in DC. Consider the following evidence. LCMV strains can be divided into two groups. The first group marked CTL-P+, includes viruses isolated from lymphocytes or macrophages obtained from CD4, perforin, and TNFα ko mice persistently infected for at least 7 months. These viruses failed to generate LCMV-specific CTL responses and caused a persistent infection. The second group marked CTL-P+, includes viruses isolated from CNS of TNFα ko mice. These viruses elicited a potent LCMV-specific CTL response, which cleared the virus within 2 wk and left no evidence of persistent infection. The Armstrong (ARM) 53b strain is a CTL-P+ virus (Sevilla 2000[^91], Table I). According to Sevilla, et al., “first, DCs are the primary cell infected in vivo by CTL-P+ LCMV variants; second, CTL-P+ viruses astoundingly infect >50% of CD11c+ (cellular marker for most DC in mouse lymphoid tissue) and DEC-205+ (antigen expressed on DC in lymphoid tissues) cells.”

[^91]: Sevilla 2000, Table I

Expression of a gene under the control of the rat insulin promoter (RIP) in transgenic mice induces a large number of immune susceptible cells. Consider the following evidence. Six percent transgenic mice expressing the LCMV glycoprotein (GP) or nucleoprotein (NP) under control of the rat insulin promoter (RIP-GP, RIP-NP) in β cells, developed hyperglycemia. The pancreatic tissue of these mice revealed swollen islets with a group glass appearance (Oldstone 1991, Fig 4A). No other treatment was neccessary to produce an immune reaction.
Other transgenic mice carrying the hemagglutinin (HA) of the A/Japan/305/57 strain of influenza virus gene, or interferon-γ (IFNγ) under the control of RIP (RIP-HA and RIP-IFNγ, respectively), developed spontaneous diabetes with lymphocytic infiltration (Roman 1990, Sarvetnick 1990). It is interesting that transgenic mice expressing IFNγ under control of rat glucagon promoter (RGP-IFNγ), which is expressed in α cells, did not develop diabetes. The increase in IFNγ concentration induced no net β cell destruction. The observed β cells apoptosis in transgenic RGP-IFNγ mice was compensated by vigorous regeneration. Specifically, the inlets showed no insulitis (Yamaoka 1999).

According to Yamaoka, et al., “IFNγ alone is insufficient for the complete destruction of β cells in vivo.” In terms of microcompetition, the microcompetition between the mouse’s own insulin promoter (MIP) and the foreign rat’s insulin promoter (RIP), reduces the expression of insulin, leading, eventually, to β cell destruction and trigger apoptosis. Therefore, RGP which does not microcompete with MIP does not produce diabetes.

(ii) Diabetes

RIP-GP transgenic mice show high GP expression in β cells (some mice spontaneously develop diabetes). However, most mice do not develop diabetes. In the resistant mice the expression of GP is not excessively high. In these mice, GP expression is not high enough to spontaneously produce autoimmune disease. According to the two peak model, although antigen production is high (high trigger apoptosis), it is not sufficiently high to result in permanent β cell destruction and diabetes. Infection with LCMV excessively slows DC shifting the second peak right and up. This shift tips the balance in some resistant mice towards diabetes.

Consider the following studies.

1. Transgenic mice that express the viral glycoprotein (GP) or nucleoprotein (NP) from lymphocytic choriomeningitis virus (LCMV) under control of the rat insulin promoter (RIP-GP, RIP-NP) in pancreatic β cells develop autoimmune diabetes (IDDM) after infection with LCMV ARM 53b (Ohashi 1991, Oldstone 1991).

2. Adoptive transfer of α autoreactive CD8+ cytotoxic T-lymphocytes (CTL) that are present in the periphery of RIP-GP or RIP-NP transgenic mice that were active in vitro
and in vivo into uninfected transgenic recipients rarely resulted in hyperglycemia nor in insulitis, despite their ability to home to the islets and induce peri-insulitis (von Herrath 1997\(^{497}\)). The weak trigger apoptosis induces peri-insulitis. However, without LCMV infection not enough DC are trapped in near the β cells to produce massive insulitis and significant T-cell induced apoptosis. In terms of the two peak model, without LCMV infection which slows DC, the second peak does not show enough shift to the right and up.

3. The P14 TCR single-transgenic model express a LCMV-GP specific T-cell receptor. In P14 transgenic mice tolerance is induced with repeated intravenous administration of the LCMV GP peptide epitope GP33. Peptide administration resulted in upregulation of T-cell activation markers, such as CD69 (Garza 2000\(^{498}\), Fig. 1a). In addition, whereas transgenic T-cells from untreated mice were incapable of lysing peptide pulsed target ex vivo, in vivo peptide treatment induced T-cell cytolytic activity (Ibid, Fig. 1b). Finally, peptide administration induced expansion of T-cells followed by deletions (Ibid, Fig. 1C).

Tissue circulating DC internalize the administered GP33 peptide. The DC moderately slow down, increase surface Ag expression and costimulation, and eventually migrate to the lymph node where they present the moderate concentration of surface Ag and costimulation to T-cells, causing activation, proliferation and deletion. Ex vivo treatment with GP33 fail to activate T-cell since activation requires presentation by DC.

Intravenous administration of GP33 to double transgenic mice (RIP-GP/P14) expressing GP on pancreatic β cells and LCMV-GP-specific T-cell receptor on T-cells surprisingly did not induce diabetes (Ibid, Fig 2a).

In both models, administration of GP33 activates T-cells. However, since DC do not slow enough to be trapped in tissue, no homing signal is produced to chemoattract the activated T-cells to the inlets.

Immunization of the double transgenic mice intravenously with GP33 and FGK45, a rat anti-mouse-CD40 activating antibody, unlike immunization with GP33 and a rat polyclonal antiserum as iso-type-matched control, produced diabetes in all GP33 + anti-CD40 treated mice (Ibid, 2a). In both groups, the induction of T-cell activation markers
and cytotoxic activity were identical. However, GP33 + control Ab produced mild pancreatic infiltration, while GP33 + anti-CD40 produced sever insulitis (Ibid, Fig 2b,c,d).

CD40 ligation on monocytes/macrophages induces TF cell surface expression. Specifically, treatment of purified monocytes with a with a stimulating anti-CD40 mAb (BL-C4) strongly induced monocyte procoagulant activity (PCA) which was related to TF expression as shown by flow cytometric analysis (Pradier 1996599). Exposure of monocytes/macrophages to either cell membranes isolated from activated CD4+ T-cells (expressing CD40L) or a human rCD40L increased TF surface expression and enzymatic activity (Mach 1997500, Fig. 2A, and B, Table). Anti-CD40L mAb blocked induction of TF in response to CD40 ligation. A similar effect on TF expression was observed in vascular smooth muscle cells (SMC) (Schonbeck 2000501).

CD40 ligation increases monocytes/macrophages and, most likely, dendritic cell, TF expression. TF expression on monocytes/macrophage and dendritic cells propels backward motility (see chapter on atherosclerosis above). A CD40L deficiency, therefore, should reduce dendritic cell migration to draining lymph node. A study analyzed the in vivo DC response to skin contact sensitization in CD40 ligand +/- mice. Immunohistochemistry of skin sections in unsensitized CD40 ligand +/- mice revealed no differences in terms of numbers and morphology of dendritic epidermal Langerhans cells (LC) compared to wild-type C57BL/6 mice. However, following hapten sensitization migration of LC out of skin was dramatically reduced and accumulation of DC in draining lymph nodes substantially diminished in CD40 ligand +/- mice compared to control (Moodycliffe 2000502, Fig 2, 3). These observation are consistent with intact forward motility and deficient dendritic cell backward motility.

The effect of CD40 ligation on TF expression, can explain the results in Garza 2000 above. FGK45, the anti-CD40 agonist, increased TF expression on DC. The increased TF expression slowed down DC migration. As a result some DC arrived to the lymph node with increased surface GP33 concentration and costimulation. Other DC were trapped in the tissue. According to the slow DC model of autoimmune disease, the double transgenic mice treated with GP33 and FGK45 should develop diabetes. Moreover,
Garza, et al., report that administration of GP33 and LPS, another inducer of TF expression, as expected, also resulted in diabetes.

(iii) Lupus

The H8 transgenic mice express the LCMV glycoprotein epitope (GP) 33-41 under control of a major histocompatibility complex (MHC) class I promoter. Since MHC class I is most likely expressed every cell, H8 mice express and present the GP33 epitope in every cell, specifically DC. Adoptive transfer of CD8+ T-cells from LCMV T-cell receptor transgenic mice into H8 mice led to efficient induction of peripheral tolerance after a period of transient activation and deletion (Ehl 1998503). In contrast, infection with LCMV 1-3 days after T-cell adoptive transfer, resulted in disease. The mice showed signs of wasting 6-8 d after infection and 20-40% under specific pathogen-free conditions (up to 100% under non specific pathogen-free conditions) died within 12-15 d after infection. The remaining mice continued to lose weight and all died 3-5 mo after infection. Tissue examination revealed CD8+ T-cell infiltration in various organs, such as spleen, liver, gut, and skin (Ibid, Fig. 3). Infection of control mice did not lead to detectable clinical symptoms.

The spleen, liver, gut and skin show significant rate of tissue renewal indicating a considerable rate of normal cell apoptosis. This normal cell apoptosis loads antigens, including GP33, on surface of surveilling DC. DC internal expression of GP33 also loads antigens on these cells. However, these loadings produces GP33 (and other antigens) surface concentration only sufficient to generate tolerance and not T-cell infiltration. Infection of H8 mice with LCMV slows DC (some to a halt) in all tissues, resulting is increased antigen surface concentration. According to the tow peak model, the increase in antigen surface concentration and DC trapping result in T-cell infiltration in many tissues.

Compare RIP-GP and H8 transgenic mice infected with LCMV in terms of DC surface concentration the GP33 antigen.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>RIP-GP</th>
<th>H8</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pancreas</td>
<td>•</td>
<td>• DC internal GP33 expression</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
In spleen, liver, gut and skin, internal expression of GP33 tips the balance from tolerance (or delayed infiltration) in RIP-GP mice, to T-cell infiltration in H8 mice (compare cells in table above for same tissue in both mice models). In pancreas, the lack of DC internal expression of GP33 in RIP-GP mice is probably more than compensated by the increase apoptosis in pancreatic β cells induced by transfection with RIP-GP (see above).

The concepts presented in this table also predict that in H8 mice the rate of T-cell infiltration in different tissues, is correlated with the rate of tissue renewal.

Another prediction suggested by this table is that any other treatment of H8 mice which slows DC enough produces similar results. Ehl, *et al.*, tried a variety of infection and inflammatory stimuli. Specifically, they used 10 μg LPS. LPS increases TF.
expression on DC (see chapter on atherosclerosis above) and therefore, slows DC backward motility. LPS treatement of H8 mice induced activation (Ibid, Fig. 8 b).

Sytematic lupus erythematous (also called disseminated lupus erythematous, lupus, lupus erythematous and SLE) is a chronic inflammatory autoimmune disease that affect many organs such as skin, joints, kidney, heart, lung and nervous system. At onset, only one organ system is usually involved, however, additional organs may be affected later. A typical observation in lupus patients and animal models is spontaneous T-cell activation and organ infiltration.

Consider an infection with a GABP virus which result in sufficiently high viral genome number in circulating DC. Microcompetition between the viral and TF N-boxes increases TF surface expression which reduces DC backward motility. According to the two peak model, the excessively slowing of DC backward motility induces pathologies similar to the symptoms observed in lupus patients. The organs affected first are those that show temporary or typical high trigger apoptosis (injured organs or organ with high tissue renewal).

Monocyte/macrophage infection with a GABP virus result in atherosclerosis (see chapter on atherosclerosis above). Both DC and macrophages originate from CD34+ progenitor cells (Hart 1997\textsuperscript{504}, Fig 3). CD34+ cells are permissive for a GABP viral infection. For instance, Zhuravskaya, et al., (1997\textsuperscript{505}) demonstrated that human cytomegalovirus (HCMV), a GABP virus, persisted in infected bone marrow (BM) CD34+ cells (see also, Maciejewski and St Jeor 1999\textsuperscript{506}, Sindre 1996\textsuperscript{507}). According to the proposed models, infection of CD34+ cells, therefore, result in both lupus and atherosclerosis. The observed concurrence of lupus and atherosclerosis is well documented. See for instance some recent reviews on the issue of accelerated atherosclerosis in systemic lupus erythematous (Ilowite 2000\textsuperscript{508}, Urowitz 2000\textsuperscript{509}). Such observation are consistent with microcompetition, TF propelled backward motility, and the two peak model.

Another interesting observation explained by these models is hypercoagulation thrombosis in lupus. The infection of CD34+ with a GABP virus increases TF expression on circulating monocytes. Such excessive TF expression in lupus was documented in a
few studies (see, for instance, Dobado-Berrios 1999\textsuperscript{510}). The excessive TF expression increases the probability of coagulation. (More on thrombosis in lupus and other diseases see the chapter on stroke.

(iv) Graft versus host disease (GVHD)

DC from H8 mice (H8-DC) constitutively express the GP33 epitope. A single injection of 10\textsuperscript{6} H8-DC (high dose) to RIP-GP transgenic mice resulted in no glycemic change or transient increase in blood glucose to intermediate levels (15-20 mM), eventually returning to normal levels within a few days (Ludewig 1998\textsuperscript{511}, Fig. 1A). A single injection of 10\textsuperscript{5} H8-DC (intermediate dose) did not result in diabetes. However, repetitive H8-DC injections of intermediate doses, i.e., three doses of 10\textsuperscript{7} DC in 6-d intervals (Ibid, Fig. 1C), or four doses of 10\textsuperscript{4} DC in 2-d intervals (Ibid, Fig 1D), resulted in T-cell infiltration (Ibid, Fig 3) and diabetes. 50% of the repetitively immunized mice developed diabetes between day 10 and 14, while 40% developed hyperglycemia by days 18-21. Based on these observations Ludewig, \textit{et al.}, concluded that "the duration of antigenic stimulation by professional APCs, i.e., the integral of CTL activity over time, determines the disease outcome in this model of autoimmune diabetes."

Consider a DC migrating "near" pancreatic β cells at a certain speed. During the time the DC spends "near" the β cells, it has a certain probability, denoted P, to internalize a certain concentration [Ag] of β cell antigens. Now, consider two DC also migrating at this speed. Assuming independent DC migration and internalization, the probability that at least one of them internalizes [Ag] is 2P (the independent assumption does not hold if, for instance, the two DC co-migrate and end up internalizing a portion of [Ag] each).

Under the independent assumption, an increase in the number of migrating DC, without change in other conditions, increases the probability of antigen internalization. Consider, as an alternative situation, one DC migrating at half the original speed. Since the time the DC spends near the β cells is twice as long, its probability that the cell internalize [Ag] is 2P, the same as the probability of the two DC migrating at the original speed. Increasing the number of migrating DC and slowing migration of the existing pool of DC produce the same effect. Repetitive immunization with H8-DC is equivalent to slowing DC backward motility. Since the integral of T-cell induced apoptosis over time determines the outcome
of autoimmune disease in the case of slow DC migration (see two peak model above), the same integral is important in the case of repetitive DC immunization.

Graft-versus-host disease (GVHD) is a complication following allogeneic bone marrow (BM) transplantation (BMT). A typical observation in GVHD patients is spontaneous T-cell activation and organ infiltration. Approximately, 50% of patients undergoing allogeneic BMT with related HLA-matched donor develop GVHD.

A study measured the percentage of DC present in blood mononuclear cells (MNC) in patients following allogeneic and autologous stem cell transplantation and healthy controls. The mean number of DC as a percentage of MNC was 0.58%, 0.40% and 0.42%, for patients following allogeneic transplantation showing no GVH symptoms, patients following autologous transplantation, and healthy controls, respectively (P = 0.06 for the difference between allogeneic and autologous patients) (Feamley 1999512, Fig 3, 6). These results indicate that allogeneic stem cell transplantation increases DC number. The higher DC number increases the probability of antigen internalization. In tissues with high normal apoptosis (rapidly renewing tissues), such an increase might result in T-cell infiltration and tissue apoptosis.

(v) Vaccination with DC

Let the expression of TF, CD86 and level of antigen presentation on DC (denoted [Ag]) be correlated. Treatment with CD40L, pulsing, apoptosis of tissue of bystander cells, transfection with a gene expressing an epitope increase TF, CD86 and [Ag]. This increase is called maturation. Let assume that the distribution of number of DC expressing TF, CD86 and [Ag] is normal. Consider figure 43.

Maturation in the figure is represented by a shift of the DC distribution to higher TF, CD86 and [Ag] values. According to the TF propelled backward motility model there exists a certain level of TF expression which traps DC. This level is marked with a thick line in the figure. A cell with lower TF concentration is migration-borne (capable of migrating). A cell with higher TF concentration is trapped.

Consider vaccination with two kinds of cells, less mature and more mature, denoted with solid lines in the figure. This model provides the following predictions.
Vaccination with the less mature cells induces no trapping. All cells migrate out of tissue. In contrast, vaccination with more mature cells induces cell trapping. Some cells migrate out of tissue, represented by the area under the DC distribution left of the thick line, while the rest are trapped (the area right of the thick line).

Consider the following study. DC from CD14+ peripheral blood monocytes of rhesus macaques were cultured for 4 days in GM-CSF and IL-4. The cells show no expression of CD83, the mature DC marker, moderate expression of the costimulatory molecules CD80, CD86, and CD40, and high levels of MHC class I and class II (Barratt-Boytes 2000\textsuperscript{513}, Fig. 1). These cells were designated immature DC. Other cells were cultured for additional 2 days (total of 7 days) with added CD40L, a known inducer of rapid maturation. The addition of CD40L induced uniform expression of CD83, and high expression of CD80, CD86, and CD40 (Ibid, Fig. 1). These cells were designated mature DC. To determine the relative efficiency of immature and mature DC migration, the site of injection was inspected 36 h after injection of cells. Injection of 2.7×10\textsuperscript{6} immature DC resulted in minor localized acute inflammatory response. No fluorescently labeled cells could be identified at that time. In contrast, injection of 3.7×10\textsuperscript{6} mature DC resulted in a severe acute inflammatory infiltrate at the site of injection in two out of three animals. A large number of fluorescently labeled DC were detected in the dermis at 35 h in these animals (Ibid, Fig. 8). The experimental configuration in this study is presented in figure 44.

Many more mature DC are trapped following injection with mature rather than immature cells. Compare the areas right of the thick line under the mature and immature curves. According to the study the size of the area representing the trapped DC following injection of immature cells should be zero. However, according to the two peak model, to produce T-cell infiltration, some DC should be trapped. This inconsistency can be resolved if we assume that the infiltration T-cells cleared most of the few trapped cells before the 36 hours inspection.

This study reports another important observation. Following injection of immature and mature DC, a portion of the injected cells (0.07 - 0.12%) reached the lymph node (Ibid, Fig. 7) producing an immune reaction at the injection site. In terms of the figure
above, in both cases the area under the curves, left of the thick line, is not empty. Both injections included migration-borne DC. Similar observations are reported in Hermans 2000\textsuperscript{514}. However, not all injected DC migrate to the lymph node. Some enter circulation. These DC can end up in any tissue. According to the discussion above, if enough injected DC enter circulation over an extended period of time, they might produce an immune reaction in tissues with abnormally high epitope expression or rapidly renewing tissues. Consider the following studies.

SM-LacZ transgenic mice widely express the β-galactosidase (β-gal) antigen in cardiomyocytes of the right ventricle and in arterial smooth muscle cells. Repetitive treatment of SM-LacZ mice with DC presenting β-gal peptide resulted in vascular immunopathology with strong lymphocytic infiltration in small and medium-sized arteries and in the right ventricle (Ludewig 2000\textsuperscript{515}). Immunization of SM-LacZ mice with DC pulsed with an irrelevant peptide produced a mild liver infiltration and no anti-β-gal CTL activity. Immunization of nontransgenic mice with DC presenting the β-gal peptide also produced a mild liver infiltration and no anti-β-gal CTL activity. Naive SM-LacZ mice showed no specific CTL reactivity (Ibid, Fig. 2B). Similar observations of autoimmune disease induce by DC immunization is reported in Roskrow (1999\textsuperscript{516}).

\( (b) \) Studies with Theiler’s murine encephalomyelitis virus (TMEV)

\( (i) \) TMEV characteristics

TME viruses are members of the genus \textit{Cardiovirus} in the family \textit{Picornaviridae}. These viruses can be divided into two groups based on their neurovirulence characteristics following intracerebral (i.c.) inoculation of mice. Highly virulent strains, such as GDVII virus, cause a rapidly fatal encephalitis. The less virulent strains, such as BeAn and DA show at least a 10-fold reduction in the mean 50% lethal dose (LD\textsubscript{50}) compared to the virulent strains. Moreover, they can establish a persistent infection in the central nervous system (CNS).

Let assume that all three TMEV strains, GDVII, BeAn and DA are GABP viruses. This assumption is consistent with the following evidence. The 5’ UTR of all three strains includes 9 N-boxes. Moreover, the 5’ UTR of all three strains includes a pair of N-boxes
(positions -129,-123) and (121,-115), or positions (935,941) and (943,949) when numbered according to the BeAn sequence). It is interesting the the pair in GDVII is different than the pair in BeAn and DA. In GDVII the pair of N-boxes (underlined) is CTTCCGCTCGGAAG while the pair in BeAn and DA is CTTCCCTCTCGGAAG. The GDVII pair is symmetrical while the pair in BeAn and DA is not. The asymmetry in BeAn and DA might result in reduced affinity to GABP, and therefore, reduced rate of transcription initiation. This interpretation is consistent with the following evidence.

In a series of experiments, Lipton and co-workers attempted to identify the DNA sequence responsible to the difference in these strains virulence. In these studies they constructed recombinant TMEVs by exchanging corresponding genomic regions between GDVII and BeAn. One such recombinant virus is Chi 5L, in which the (933,1142) BeAn sequence replaces the original GDVII sequence. Inoculation of Chi 5L into mice by the i.c. route showed attenuated neurovirulence. The LD$_{50}$ value for Chi 5L was $\geq 7.5 \times 10^5$ in comparison to 10 for GDVII (Lipton 1998$^{57}$, table 1). Replacing the original GDVII pair of N-boxes with the BeAn pair resulted in reduced virulence.

(ii) Demyelination (multiple sclerosis)

As with many other viruses, TMEV infection spreads from cell to cell. However, the identity of infected cells and order of viral cell-to-cell spread determines the clinical outcome. Consider an infection with a BeAn and DA virus. The first T-cells infected in the nervous system are neurons. The infection results in cell apoptosis. The cell debris is internalized by surveilling macrophages, slowing the cells backward motility, trapping a few cells which induces T-cell infiltration. These events are characteristic of the acute phase, which terminates when the neuronal infection is cleared, inflammation in gray matter subsides, and neuron apoptosis returns to normal levels. However, during the acute phase the virus spreads from neurons to some infiltrating macrophages, establishing a persistent infection. The infection increases surface TF expression, slows backward motility of some macrophages and traps others in the white matter. Since infection is not lytic, trapped macrophage continue to internalize schwann cell/oligodendrocyte debris or apoptotic cells produced in normal cell turnover, or as a result of myelin damage. The internalized myelin is processed and presented on cell surface. The loaded macrophage release cytokines providing a homing signal to T-cells and new infiltrating macrophages.
Both trapped macrophages and schwann cells/oligodendrocytes present myelin on their surface bound to MHC. The infiltrating T-cells bind the presented myelin on trapped macrophage and schwann cells/oligodendrocytes and destroy them. The result such destruction is demyelination. The observations in the following studies support such a sequence of events.

Tsunoda, et al., (1997518) show that the first T-cells infected in the nervous system are neurons and that the initial limited inflammation in the gray matter subsides concurrently with the decline in neuronal apoptosis. Similar observations are reported by Ha-Lee, et al., (1995519).

According to Lipton, et al., (1995520) virus antigen(s) was first detected in the white matter on day 14 post inoculation. On days 14 and 22, virus antigen(s) was occasionally seen within long stretches of axons extending from the gray matter into anterior white matter (Ibid, Fig 2A). MOMA-2-positive cells (MOMA-2 is a monoclonal antibody to macrophages), some of which contained virus antigen(s), were observed in close proximity to infected axons (Ibid, Fig. 2A). This observation suggests that TMEV leaves the gray matter by axonal spread, is released from the axoplasm as motor neurons, and then secondarily infects macrophages in the white matter. The fact that motor neurons are the principle virus target in the acute gray matter phase of infection and the predominantly anterolateral location of virus antigen-positive cells in the white matter on days 14, 22, and 29 support this conclusion. Increasing number of virus antigen-positive, MOMA-2-positive cells appeared in the thoracic cord white matter between days 14 and 49 and then remained at this level of infection until day 73. However, only a small fraction of MOMA-2-positive cells contained virus antigen(s) during this period (Ibid, Fig. 2B). The early infiltration and apparent spread of these cells from anterior to posterior in the spinal cord, with a tendency for virus antigen-positive cells to be found at the periphery of advancing edges of lesions (Ibid, Fig 3), also supports this conclusion. Based on these observation Lipton, et al., concluded that at least some of the MOMA-2-positive cells have a hematogenous origin, and that infection occurs upon entry of these cells into the CNS.
Miller, et al., (1997) reports the temporal appearance of T-cell response to viral and known encephalitogenic myelin epitopes in TMEV-infected SJL/J mice. Clinical signs being approximately 30 days after infection and display chronic progression with 100% of the animals affected by 40-50 days postinfection. Ultraviolet light (UV)-inactivated TMEV produced a T-cell proliferation in spleen of infected mice both at day 33 postinfection, concomitant with onset of clinical signs, and at day 87. In contrast, at 33 postinfection, the major encephalitogenic epitope on myelin proteolipid protein (PLP139-151 and PLP178-191) and myelin basic protein (MBP84-104) did not produce T-cell proliferation in spleen, cervical or pooled peripheral lymph nodes. However, a response to PLP139-151 was observed in all lymphoid compartment at day 87 postinfection. Similar temporal observations are associated with the appearance of CD4+ Th1-mediated delayed-type hypersensitivity (DTH) responses. The immunodominant TMEV VP2 70-86 epitope produced DTH at all times tested. In contrast, the PLP139-151 epitope first produced DTH only at day 52, persisting through day 81 postinfection (Ibid, Fig. 1C). Assessment of DTH to a larger panel of encephalitogenic myelin epitope during late chronic disease (164 days postinfection), showed persistence of peripheral T-cell reactivity to both VP2 70-86 and PLP178-151 and appearance of responses to multiple, less immunodominant myelin epitopes including PLP56-70, PLP178-191, and the immunodominant myelin oligodendrocyte glycoprotein epitope (MGO92-106) (Ibid, Fig 1d). The study calls these observations “epitope spreading” and defines it as the process whereby epitopes distinct from and non-cross-reactive with an inducing epitope become major targets of an ongoing immune response. The longer macrophages are trapped in white matter, the higher the concentration of presented epitopes on cell surface. Since “rare” epitopes require longer macrophage residence time to accumulate at high enough concentrations, the reported epitope spreading indicates abnormally long macrophage residence time, or abnormally high macrophage trapping.

b) **Human studies**

Numerous studies report similar observations in all autoimmune diseases. Consider T-cell infiltration as an example. For the sake of brevity, in every disease we report observations which relate to different aspects of the above models.
(1) Diabetes

1. According to the “excessively slow” DC model, tissue cell destruction follows T-cell infiltration. T-cell infiltration, or insulitis, was extensively reported in pre-diabetic and recent-onset diabetic patients, see, for instance, Signore (1999252, a review), Foulis (1991253), Foulis (1984254).

2. Coxsackie B4 virus infect pancreatic β-cells inducing limited β cell death (Roivainen 2000255). The limited β-cell destruction does not result in diabetes. However, according to the two peak model, the “trigger apoptosis” result in T-cell infiltration. According to the excessively slow DC model, in individual harboring a GABP virus the T-cell induced apoptosis might result in diabetes. Consistent with this prediction, some recent studies found a strong association between Coxsackie B4 virus infection and onset of insulin-dependent diabetes mellitus in humans (Andreoli266, Andreoli266, Frisk 1997258, Clements 1995259). If Coxsackie B4 is a GABP virus, and can infect DC, the cellular events resulting from a Coxsackie B4 viral infection resemble the events of a TMEV infection (see above).

(2) Multiple sclerosis (MS)

1. According to the “excessively slow” DC model trapped DC show high expression of B7, specifically B7.2 (also called CD86). Therefore, plaque from MS patients, and specifically trapped macrophages, should show high expression of B7. Consider the following studies.

Infiltrating macrophages in brain sections from MS patients showed significant B7 immunoreactivity, in contrast to normal brains which showed no B7 immunoreactivity (De Simone 1995256). Another study found B7.1 staining in plaque from MS patients localized predominantly to lymphocytes in periventricular inflammatory cuffs, and B7-2 staining predominantly on macrophages in inflammatory infarcts (Windhagen 1995257).

2. According to the “excessively slow” DC model trapped DC express chemokine, such as MIP-1α, MIP-1β and RANTES. Therefore, plaque from MS patients, and specifically trapped macrophage, should show high expression of these chemokines. Consider the following studies.
A study measured expression of the CC chemokines MIP-1\(\alpha\), MIP-1\(\beta\), and RANTES in brain tissue from MS patients using reverse transcriptase-polymerase chain reaction techniques. Both MIP-1\(\beta\) and RANTES were significantly elevated in brain tissue of MS patients. In addition, MIP-1\(\alpha\) was also increased, although not significantly. Immunohistochemistry revealed that MIP-1\(\alpha\) and MIP-1\(\beta\) immunoreactivity was predominantly found in perivascular and parenchymal macrophages containing myelin degradation products (Boven 2000\textsuperscript{532}).

(3) Psoriasis (Ps) and atopic dermatitis (AD)

1. The effectiveness of the immune system deteriorates with age (see reviews Khanna 1999\textsuperscript{533}, Ginaldi 1999\textsuperscript{534}), which might explain the increased incidence of infectious diseases in the aged. Consider an individual harboring a persistent infection of a GABP virus in DC (for instance, cytomegalovirus). At every age, the balance between two forces, the virus drive to replicate, and the capacity of the immune system to control or clear the infection, determines the viral genome copy number present in infected cells. A decline in immune system effectiveness, therefore, increases viral genome copy number. Consistent with this conclusion, Liedtke, et al., (1993\textsuperscript{535}) showed an increase in the prevalence of herpes simplex virus 1 (HSV-1) neuronal latency with age.

Increase in viral genome copy number intensifies microcompetition, which slows DC and result in higher [Ag] and [B7] on surface of DC reaching the draining lymph node. The increase in [Ag] and [B7] increases [DC•T], which increases the probability of Th1 vs. Th2 differentiation. This argument predicts a decline in Th2 and increase in Th1 autoimmune diseases with age. Consider the following evidence.

Atopic dermatitis (AD), is a Th2 disease, while psoriasis (Ps) is a Th1 disease. A study systematically examined patients attending a dermatology clinic for the presence of AD and/or Ps. Nine hundred and eighty-three patients were studied - 224 with AD, 428 with Ps, 45 with both AD and Ps, and 286 controls. The results showed that 16.7% of the AD patients had also Ps, and 9.5% of Ps patients had AD. In consecutive occurrences, Ps generally followed AD (Beer 1992\textsuperscript{536}). Out of the 45 patients with both AD and Ps, 26 patients had onset of AD first and Ps later in life (average age = 10 and 26, respectively), 9
subjects (all children) had simultaneous onset of AD and Ps, and 1 patient had first onset of Ps at the age of 16, followed by AD+Ps at the age of 18 and return to Ps.

2. Increase in CTLA4Ig decreases [DC•T] (see formula above). As a result, T-cell induced apoptosis decreases which decreases inflammation (DC infiltration, T-cell infiltration, etc). Consider the following studies.

Patients with psoriasis vulgaris received four intravenous infusions of the soluble chimeric protein CTLA4Ig (BMS-188667) in a 26-wk, phase I, open label dose escalation study. Clinical improvement was associated with reduced cellular activation of lesional T-cells and DC. Concurrent reductions in B7.1 (CD80), B7.2 (CD86) were detected on lesional DC, which also decreased in number within lesional biopsies. Skin explant experiments suggested that these alterations in activated or mature DCs were not the result of direct toxicity of CTLA4Ig for DC (Abrams 2000\textsuperscript{537}). Based on these observations, Abrams, et al., concluded that “this study highlights the critical and proximal role of T-cell activation through the B7-CD28/CD152 costimulatory pathway in maintaining the pathology of psoriasis, including the newly recognized accumulation of mature DCs in the epidermis.”

3. According to the “excessively slow” DC model trapped DC show high expression of B7, specifically B7.2 (also called CD86). Therefore, lesions from AD and Ps patients, and specifically trapped DC, should show high expression of B7. Moreover, since DC increase B7 expression while migrating out of tissue, in case of Langerhans cells, while migrating from epidermis to dermis and than lymph vessel, B7 expression on Langerhans cells in dermis should be higher than cells in epidermis. Consider the following studies.

A study measured the expression of co-stimulatory molecules in AD and Ps patients. B7.2 and B7.1 were detected on dendritic-shaped cells not only in the epidermis but also in the dermis in the inflammatory lesions of atopic dermatitis (n = 12). B7.2 was expressed in all cases (100%), while B7.1 was expressed in only five cases (42%). These molecules were not detected in normal control subjects (n = 8) (Ohki 1997\textsuperscript{538}). Neither B7.1 nor B7.2 was detected on keratinocytes. Stronger expression of B7.2 over B7.1 was
also observed in psoriasis vulgaris (n = 11). The expression rate of these molecules on Langerhans cells increased in the dermis.

4. A persistent infection of DC with a GABP virus increases the probability of developing an autoimmune disease. Moreover, an increase in viral load should exacerbate the disease. Consider the following studies.

To detect active infection a study compared the antigen expression of cytomegalovirus (CMV), a GABP virus, in peripheral blood mononuclear cells (PBMC) from psoriatic patients (n = 30) with healthy volunteers (n = 65). The results showed higher CMV antigenaemia in psoriasis (43%) compared with healthy laboratory staff (12%, P < 0.01) and blood donors (6%, P < 0.001) (Asadullah 1999539).

Another study reports the development of psoriasis vulgaris in Four patients suffering from immune deficiency related to HTLV III, a GABP virus. The psoriasis was extensive, exudative, and almost refractory to therapeutical approaches. The bulk of dermal infiltrating mononuclear cells were CD8+ T lymphocytes (Steigleder 1986540).

HIV is a GABP virus. According to a recent review (Mallon 2000), “psoriasis occurs with at least undiminished frequency in HIV-infected individuals.” Moreover, according to the paper, “It is paradoxical that, while drugs that target T lymphocytes are effective in psoriasis, the condition should be exacerbated by HIV infection.” See also the review by Montazeri, et al., (1996541). Another study reported clinical improvement of HIV-associated psoriasis in parallel with a reduction in HIV viral load induced by effective antiretroviral therapy (Fischer 1999542).

4. Other autoimmune diseases

There many more autoimmune diseases not discussed above. Some are asthma, rheumatoid arthritis and thyroiditis. As predicted by the excessively slow DC and the two peak models, studies with patients and animal models of these diseases report observations similar to the ones already mentioned. For instance, studies in animal models of asthma showed that DC collect antigens in the airways, upregulate [Ag] and [B7], migrate to the thoracic lymph nodes where they present the antigens to T cells (Vermaelen 2000543).
Other studies showed that DC are essential for development of chronic eosinophilic airway inflammation in response to inhaled antigen in sensitized mice (Lambrecht 2000A\textsuperscript{544}, Lambrecht 2000B\textsuperscript{545}, Lambrecht 1998\textsuperscript{546}). More studies showed the significant role of B7 in allergic asthma (Mathur 1999\textsuperscript{547}, Haczku 1999\textsuperscript{548}, Padrid 1998\textsuperscript{549}, Keane-Myers 1998\textsuperscript{550}). Similar observations were reported in rheumatoid arthritis (see, for instance, Balsa 1996\textsuperscript{551}, Liu 1996\textsuperscript{552}), and thyroiditis (see, for instance, Wantanabe 1999\textsuperscript{553}, Tandon 1994\textsuperscript{554}).

VI. Discovery 6: Other disruptions of GABP pathway

1. Drug induced molecular disruptions

Microcompetition disrupts the GABP pathway. Some drugs also disrupt this pathway. As a result these drugs induce “side effects” similar to the clinical symptoms characteristic of microcompetition. Some of these side effects are weight gain, insulin resistance, and hypertension. The following sections propose the mechanism underlying these side effects.

a) Cytochrome P450

Three distinct pathways of arachidonic acid (AA) oxidation have been described. The enzyme systems involved are regiospecific and stereospecific. Of the three pathways, the products of the cyclooxygenase and lipoxygenase pathways have been extensively researched. Research on the products of the “third pathway”, the cytochrome P450-dependent monooxygenases, is less extensive. The “third pathway”, mediated by CYP enzymes, uses NADPH and molecular oxygen in a 1:1 stoichiometry. Three types of oxidative reactions are known to occur. Olefin epoxidation (epoxigenases) produces 4 sets of regio-isomers, the epoxyeicosatrienoic acids (EETS), specifically, the (5,6-), (8,9-), (11,12-) and 14,15-EETs. Allylic oxidation produces hydroxyeicosatetraenoic acids (HETEs), specifically, (5-), (8-), (9-), (11-), (12-) and 15-HETEs. Omega oxidation produces the 19- and 20-HETEs. These sets are summarized in figure 13.
b) **Arachidonic acid metabolites activate ERK**

Rabbit VSMCs were treated with the vehicle dimethyl sulfoxide (DMSO) alone or 20 μM PD98059 (PD) for 4 h and then exposed to 0.25 μM 12(R)-, 12(S)-, 15, or 20-hydroxyeicosatetraenoic acid (HETE) for 10 min. Figure 14 presents MAP kinase activity in these cells (Muthaffil 1998555, Fig. 3A).

The study also showed that 20-HETE specifically activated ERK1 and ERK2 (Ibid, Fig 3D). Similar activation of MAPK by 12-, and 15-HETE are reported in Wen 1996556 and Rao 1994557. Another study tested the effect of 14,15-epoxyeicosatrienoic acid (EET) on ERK activation. LLCPKc14, an established proximal tubule epithelial cell line derived from pig kidney, were treated with 14,15-EET (20 μm) for 15 min, then tyrosine phosphorylated proteins in cell lysates were immunoprecipitated with anti-phosphotyrosine antibodies and immunoblots probed with an antibody which recognizes ERK1 and ERK2. The results showed that 14,15-EET stimulated ERK1 and ERK2 phosphorylation (Chen 1999558, Fig 2D).

To summarize, 12(S)-, 15, or 20-HETE and 14,15-EET activate ERK. In other words, these arachidonic acid metabolites are ERK agents.

c) **12(S)-, 15, or 20-HETE and 14,15-EET CYP specific enzymes**

The following table lists a few cytochrome P450 enzymes which produce ERK agents metabolites. We call these enzymes CYP-ERKs. When the study is tissue specific, the tissue type is mentioned in the reference column.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Enzyme</th>
<th>ERK agent product</th>
<th>Reference*</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CYP1A2</td>
<td>14,15-EET</td>
<td>Rifkind 1995 (human liver)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CYP2B4</td>
<td>14(R),15(S)-EET</td>
<td>Zeldin 1995 (lung)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CYP2C8</td>
<td>14,15-EET</td>
<td>Rifkind 1995 (human liver)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CYP2C9</td>
<td>15(R)-HETE</td>
<td>Bylund 1998,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12-HETE</td>
<td>Rifkind 1995 (human liver)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>12R-HETE</td>
<td>Keeney 1998 (skin keratinocytes)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15R-HETE</td>
<td>Keeney 1998 (skin keratinocytes)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
d) **Drug inhibition of CYP-ERK and microcompetition-like diseases**

Microcompetition reduces the expression of GABP stimulated genes and increases the expression of GABP suppressed genes. Inhibition of an ERK agent produces the same effect. Consider a drug which only inhibits CYP-ERK. That is, the drug has no other chemical reactions, such as inhibition of another enzyme. Call such a drug an "empty" drug. An empty drug should produce the same clinical profile as microcompetition.

The following table lists drugs which inhibit CYP-ERKs and their microcompetition-like side effects (mostly weight gain, some insulin resistance and atherosclerosis).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Drug</th>
<th>Cytochrome P450 (CYP type)</th>
<th>Microcompetition-like symptoms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cytochrome P450 inhibitors</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phenytoin</td>
<td>Kidd 1999(^{555}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Egger 1981(^{558})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ring 1996(^{556}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Miners 1998(^{567}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glipizide</td>
<td>Kidd 1999(^{559}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Campbell 1994(^{570})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carbamazepin</td>
<td>Petersen 1995(^{571}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Hogan 2000(^{573})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Meyer 1996(^{572}) (through drug interaction)</td>
<td>Mattson 1992(^{574})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Valproic Acid, sodium valproate</td>
<td>Sadeque 1997(^{575}) (check) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Bruni 1979(^{576})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Egger 1981(^{577})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Zaccara 1987(^{578})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mattson 1992(^{579})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sharpe 1995(^{580})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Losartan</td>
<td>Song 2000(^{581}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Camargo 1991(^{584})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Meadowcroft 1999(^{582}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Miners 1998(^{583}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simvastatin</td>
<td>Transon 1996(^{585}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Matthews 1993(^{586,1})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Olanzapine</td>
<td>Ring 1996(^{587}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Osser 1999(^{588})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Koran 2000(^{589})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drug</td>
<td>References</td>
<td>Cytochrome P450 inducers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------------------</td>
<td>------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clozapine</td>
<td>Ring 1996(^{590}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Nelfinavir (PI)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fang 1998(^{591}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prior 1999(^{592}) (CYP1A2, CYP2C19)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Osser 1999(^{593})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluvoxamine</td>
<td>Olesen 2000(^{594}) (CYP1A2, CYP2C19)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluoxetine (Prozac)</td>
<td>Miners 1998(^{595}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Schmider 1997(^{596}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Harvey 2000(^{597,\text{II}})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sansone 2000(^{598})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Michelson 1999(^{599,\text{II}})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Darga 1991(^{600,\text{II}})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tolbutamide</td>
<td>Ring 1996(^{601}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Ritonavir (PI)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Miners 1998(^{602}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lasker 1998(^{603}) (CYP2C9, CYP2C19)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wissler 1975(^{604,\text{II}})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ballagi-Pordany 1991(^{605,\text{III}})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anastrozole</td>
<td>Grimm 1997(^{606}) (CYP1A2, CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wiseman 1998(^{607})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lonning 1998(^{608})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Buzdar 1998(^{609})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jonat 1997(^{610})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Buzdar 1997(^{611})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hannaford 1997(^{612})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Buzdar 1997(^{613})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Buzdar 1996(^{614})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jonat 1996(^{615})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nelfinavir (PI)</td>
<td>Khaliq 2000(^{616}) (CYP2C19)</td>
<td>Amprenavir (PI)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lillibridge 1998(^{617}) (CYP2C19, CYP1A2)(^{V})</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ritonavir (PI)</td>
<td>Muirhead 2000(^{618}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kumar 1999(^{619}) (CYP2C9, CYP2C19)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kumar 1996(^{620}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Eagling 1997(^{621}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amprenavir (PI)</td>
<td>Fung 2000(^{622}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td>Saquinavir (PI)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saquinavir (PI)</td>
<td>Eagling 1997(^{623}) (CYP2C9)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I Increase in BMI was associated with smaller decrease in common femoral arterial stiffness.

II Fluoxetine produces a transient weight loss leading to gain in body weight in the long term.

III Tolbutamide induced atherosclerosis.

IV Nifedipine reduced insulin resistance.

V Inhibition occurs at supratherapeutic concentrations.
VI Replacing, or not including a protease inhibitor in therapy was associated with attenuated fat distribution abnormalities and insulin resistance (Barreiro 2000\textsuperscript{628}, Mulligan 2000\textsuperscript{629}, Gervasoni 1999\textsuperscript{630}, Carr 2000\textsuperscript{631}, Martinez 2000\textsuperscript{632}, see also review, Passalaris 2000\textsuperscript{633}).

Drugs are not “empty.” Drugs have other chemical reactions aside from inhibition of CYP-ERK. Take a microcompetition induced clinical symptom, such as weight gain. There are three possible events. The other chemical reactions might increase, decrease or not change body weight. Take the combined effect of CYP-ERK inhibition and the other chemical reactions. The $H_0$ hypothesis assumes a uniform (random) distribution of these events, that is, the probability of every such event is $1/3$ so that the probability that a CYP-ERK inhibitor causes weight gain is $1/3$. The probability that each of two CYP-ERK different inhibitors cause weight gain is $(1/3)^* (1/3)$. In the table above there are 16 drugs, 15 CYP-ERK inhibitors and 1 CYP-ERK inducer. The probability that the 15 inhibitors increase weight and the 1 inducer reduces weight, under the $H_0$ assumption, is $(1/3)^{16}$ or $< 0.0001$.

2. **Mutation, injury, and diet induced molecular disruptions**

See section on obesity.

**VII. Discovery 7: Treatment**

A healthy system is in stable equilibrium. Microcompetition establishes a new, stable equilibrium which reflects the modified availability of transcription resources. Assume that the two equilibria are points in a measure space, that is, a space with a unit and direction. In fact, almost all molecular and clinical measurements define such a space. Assume that any point in this space indicates a disease, and that the severity of the disease increases with the distance from the healthy system equilibrium. In this space, the distance between the microcompetition equilibrium and the healthy system equilibrium is small. The small distance between equilibria results in slow progression of the microcompetition diseases. Atherosclerosis or cancer, for instance, may take years to become clinically evident. Consider figure 45.
Denote difference between equilibria with $\Delta$, and denote difference between the microcompetition equilibrium ($M_E$) and the healthy system equilibrium ($H_E$) with $\Delta(M_E - H_E)$. Most successful treatments create a new equilibrium ($T_E$) somewhere between $M_E$ and $H_E$. The small distance between the microcompetition equilibrium and the healthy system equilibrium poses a challenge in measuring the effectiveness of such treatments. Since $T_E$ is between $M_E$ and $H_E$, the distance between $T_E$ and $M_E$ is even smaller than the distance between $H_E$ and $M_E$, $\Delta(T_E - H_E) < \Delta(M_E - H_E)$. We assumed that the rate of disease progression/regression, of the microcompetition diseases is a function of the distance between equilibria. Hence, the difference in rate of disease progression between the rate of progression after treatment and during microcompetition is even smaller. Since the clinical changes induced by the move from point $H_E$ to $M_E$ are usually difficult to measure, the clinical changes induced by the move from point $M_E$ to $T_E$ are also difficult to measure (most likely even more difficult).

To address this issue, the following sections report results of studies which meet two conditions. One, since treatment effectiveness is reflection of the distance between two states of system equilibrium, only *in vivo* studies are included. Second, since the effect of treatment is slow to occur, only results of clinical and animal studies conducted over extended periods of time, at least a few weeks, are included. In some cases, the included studies report results which were obtained after years of treatment.

The studies are divided into three sections. The first section includes studies with GABP kinase agents. These agents stimulate the phosphorylation of a GABP kinase, such as ERK or JNK. The second section includes studies with antioxidation agents. These agents reduce oxidation stress in infected cells. The third section includes studies with viral N-box agents. These agents reduce the concentration of viral DNA in the host.

Consider figure 46. The targets of these treatments are marked with filled boxes. Microcompetition between viral N-box and cellular genes for GABP is marked with a thick arrow.
1. **GABP kinase agents**

A GABP kinase agent stimulates the phosphorylation of a GABP kinase, such as ERK or JNK. The increase in the GABP kinase phosphorylation increases transcription of GABP stimulated genes and decreases transcription of GABP suppressed genes (see above). Since, microcompetition has the opposite effect on these classes of genes, a GABP kinase agent leads to slower progression of the microcompetition diseases.

**a) Dietary fiber**

(1) **Effect on sodium butyrate**

Dietary fiber lead to the production of sodium butyrate, a short chain fatty acid (SCFA), during anaerobic fermentation in the colon.

(2) **Effect on ERK**

Sodium butyrate is an ERK agent (see above). As a result, sodium butyrate phosphorylates GABP, which, in turn, potentiates binding of p300.

(3) **Effect on microcompeted genes**

(a) **Metallothionein**

Microcompetition with a GABP virus decreases expression of metallothionein (see above). Treatment with sodium butyrate activated the metallothionein (MT) gene in certain carcinoma cell lines. Consider the following studies.

Different embryonal carcinoma cell lines show different basal levels of MT mRNA. For instance, the F9 cell line shows intermediate basal levels of MT expression, while PC13, a similar cell line, shows very high levels. Since OC15S1 stem cells usually have very low basal levels, these cell were chosen for testing the effect of sodium butyrate on MT mRNA. OC15 embryonal carcinoma (OC15 EC) cells differentiate during 4 days in culture in the presence of retinoic acid (OC15 END). OC15 EC and OC15 END cells were treated with sodium butyrate and the MT mRNA levels were analyzed by Northern blots and quantified by densitometry. Figure 47 presents the results (Andrews 1987\(^63\), Fig 1).
The results show that sodium butyrate increases MT mRNA in both undifferentiated OC15 EC and differentiated OC15 END cells. F9 EC cells, although having higher MT basal mRNA levels, responded similarly to sodium butyrate treatment. It should be noted that the effect of sodium butyrate was specific since sodium propionate and sodium acetate, the other two products of bacterial fermentation in the colon, had no effect on MT mRNA levels.

Another study used ROS 1728, a cloned rat osteosarcoma cell line. In this study, sodium butyrate induced MT synthesis in a dose-dependent manner (Thomas 1991). A third study used rat primary, non-transformed hepatocytes. Sodium butyrate treatment of these cells produced a 2-4 fold increase in MT mRNA (Liu 1992, Fig 6).

It is interesting that in the non-transformed cells sodium butyrate increased MT mRNA 2-4 fold, while in some carcinoma cell lines the increase was 20 fold (see, for instance, the increase in MT mRNA in OC15 embryonal carcinoma cells above). A compelling explanation is that the relatively low basal MT mRNA in OC15 cells result from microcompetition with viral DNA present in these cells. In such a case, sodium butyrate should show a larger effect in OC15 relative to the non-transformed cells.

(4) Effect on clinical symptoms

(a) Obesity, insulin resistance, hypertension

The Coronary Artery Risk Development in Young Adults (CARDIA) Study, a multicenter population-based cohort study, tested the change in cardiovascular disease (CVD) risk factors over a 10 year period (1985-1986 to 1995-1996) in Birmingham, AL; Chicago, IL; Minneapolis, MN; and Oakland, CA. A total of 2,909 healthy black and white adults, age 18 to 30 years at enrollment, were included in the study. The results showed that dietary fiber consumption was inversely associated with body weight in both blacks and whites. At all levels of fat intake, subjects consuming the most fiber gained less weight than those consuming the least fiber. Moreover, fiber consumption was also inversely associated with fasting insulin levels and systolic and diastolic blood pressure in both black and white subjects. (Ludwig 1999).
Fifty-two overweight patients, mean body mass index (BMI) = 29.3, participated in a 6 month, randomized, double-blind, placebo-controlled, parallel group design, study. The treatments included an energy restricted diet plus dietary fiber supplement of 7 g/day, or the diet plus placebo. The results showed that the fiber treated patients lost significantly more weight relative to the placebo treated patients (5.5 ± 0.7 kg, vs. 3.0 ± 0.5 kg, P = 0.005). Hunger feelings, measured using visual analogue scales (VAS), were significantly reduced in the fiber-treated group, whereas a significant increase was seen in the placebo group (P < 0.02) (Rigaud 1990^638).

In another study, ninety-seven mildly obese females participated in 52 week, randomized, double-blind, placebo-controlled trial, study. The treatment consisted of a restricted diet providing 1,200 kcal/day and a dietary fiber supplement of 7 g/day for 11 weeks, (part I), followed by a diet providing 1,600 kcal/day and a dietary fiber supplement of 6 g/day for 16 weeks (part II). Finally placebo was withdrawn and all remaining compliant subjects were given a dietary fiber supplement of 6 g/day and an ad libium diet for the rest of the period (part III). Initial body weights were comparable in the fiber group and placebo group. The results showed that during part I, weight reduction in the fiber supplemented group was significantly higher compared to the placebo group (4.9 kg and 3.3 kg, respectively, P = 0.05). Accumulated weight reduction during part II remained significantly higher in the fiber supplemented group compared to the placebo group (3.8 kg and 2.8 kg, respectively, P < 0.05). (Total weight loss in the fiber group after 52 weeks was 6.7 kg). The probability of adherence to the treatment regimen was significantly higher in the fiber group from week 13 and onwards (P < 0.01). Initial blood pressures were comparable. A significant reduction of systolic blood pressure was observed in both groups. However, a significant reduction of diastolic blood pressure was observed in the fiber group only (P < 0.05) (Ryttig 1989^639).

These studies show that dietary fiber consumption induces weight loss, reduces insulin resistance and attenuates hypertension.

(b) atherosclerosis

Soybean hull is a rich source of dietary fiber. Therefore, a diet enriched with soybean hull should attenuate atherosclerosis. Consider the following study.
Twenty five monkeys were divided into 5 groups, each subjected to a different diet. The T1 group received the basal diet; T2, the basal diet plus palm oil; T3, the basal diet plus palm oil and soybean hull; T4, the basal diet plus cholesterol, and T5, the basal diet plus cholesterol and soybean hull. The diets were given for a period of 8 months with water provided ad lib. At the end of the experiment thorax surgery was performed on the animals under general anesthesia. The aorta was removed for histopathological observation and stained with hematoxylin and eosine. Histopathological observation of the aorta showed that adding soybean hull to the basal diet + palm oil diet reduced formation of atherosclerotic lesions from 46.67 of the T1 group to 31.25% in the T3 group. Adding soybean hull to the basal diet + cholesterol reduced formation of lesion from 86.25 to 53.38% (Piliang 1996\textsuperscript{640}). Based on these observations, Piliang, et al., concluded that “the soybean hull given in the diet has the ability to prevent the development of atherosclerosis in the aorta of the experimental animals.”

(c) Cancer

Consumption of dietary fiber is associated with reduced risk of several types of cancer (Kim 2000\textsuperscript{641}, Madar 1999\textsuperscript{642}, Camire 1999\textsuperscript{643}, Mohandas 1999\textsuperscript{644}, Heaton 1999\textsuperscript{645}, Cummings 1999\textsuperscript{646}, Ravin 1999\textsuperscript{647}, Reddy 1999A \textsuperscript{648}, Reddy 1999B \textsuperscript{649}, Earnest 1999\textsuperscript{650}, Kritchevsky 1999\textsuperscript{651}, Cohen 1999\textsuperscript{652}).

b) Acarbose

Acarbose is a $\alpha$-glucosidase inhibitor, a new class of drugs used in the treatment of diabetes mellitus. $\alpha$-glucosidases are enzymes released from the brush border of the small intestine. The enzymes hydrolyze di- and oligosaccharides, derived from diet and luminal digestion of starch by pancreatic amylase, into monosaccharides. Since only monosaccharides are transported across intestinal cell membranes, $\alpha$-glucosidase inhibition reduces carbohydrate absorption.

(1) Effect on sodium butyrate

Acarbose inhibits starch digestion in the human small intestine, and therefore, increases the amount of starch available for microbial fermentation to acetate, propionate, and butyrate in the colon. A study examined fermentations by fecal suspensions obtained
from subjects who participated in an acarbose-placebo crossover trial. The results showed that the concentrations of acetate, propionate, and butyrate were 57, 13, and 30% of the total final concentrations, respectively, for acarbose treated subjects and 57, 20, and 23% for untreated subjects (Wolin 199963, Table 1, the statistical significance for the difference between acarbose and placebo was $P < 0.002$ for propionate, and $P < 0.02$ for butyrate). Based on these results, Wolin, et al., concluded that “our results show that acarbose treatment results in decreases in the activities of colonic bacteria ... that form propionate and an increase in the activity of bacteria that produce butyrate.”

To determine the effects of acarbose on colonic fermentation, another study gave subjects 50-200 mg acarbose, or placebo (cornstarch), three times per day, with meals in a double-blind crossover study. Fecal concentrations of starch and starch-fermenting bacteria were measured and fecal fermentation products were determined after incubation of fecal suspensions with and without added substrate for 6 and 24 h. Substrate additions were cornstarch, cornstarch plus acarbose and potato starch. Dietary starch consumption was similar during acarbose and placebo treatment periods. The results showed that butyrate in feces, measured either as concentration or percentage of total short-chain fatty acids, was significantly greater with acarbose treatment compared to placebo, while propionate was significantly smaller (Wolin 199964, Table 1. $P < 0.0001$). Moreover, butyrate production was significantly greater in fermentations in samples collected during acarbose treatment, whereas production of acetate and propionate was significantly less. Based on their results, Wolin, et al., concluded that “acarbose effectively augmented colonic butyrate production by several mechanisms; it reduced starch absorption, expanded concentrations of starch-fermenting and butyrate-producing bacteria and inhibited starch use by acetate- and propionate-producing bacteria.”

(2) Effect on clinical symptoms

(a) Obesity

Acarbose or placebo was administered to non-insulin dependent diabetes (NIDDM) patients for 1 year in a randomized, double-blind, placebo-controlled, parallel design study. The effect of acarbose treatment on change in body weight is summarized in figure 48 (Wolever 199765, Fig. 1).
After one year, the 130 subjects treated with acarbose each experienced an average weight loss of 0.46 ± 0.28 kg. In contrast, the 149 subject treated with placebo each experienced a 0.33 ± 0.25 kg weight gain (P = 0.027). Interestingly, acarbose had no effect on energy intakes, nutrient intakes, or dietary patterns.

c) Vanadate

An ERK phosphatase is an enzyme that inactivates ERK by dephosphorylation of either Thy, Tyr, or both residues (see above). The class of all ERK phosphatases includes, for instance, PP2A, a type 1/2 serine/threonine phosphatase, PTP1B, a protein tyrosine phosphatase, and MKP-1, a dual specificity phosphatase. Inhibition of an ERK phosphatase stimulates ERK phosphorylation. The increase in ERK phosphorylation increases transcription of GABP stimulated genes and decreases transcription of GABP suppressed genes (see above). Since, microcompetition has the opposite effect on these classes of genes, inhibition of an ERK phosphatase leads to slower progression of the microcompetition diseases. Consider vanadate as an example.

Vanadate (VO$_4^{3-}$) and vanadate derivatives are general protein tyrosine phosphatase (PTP) inhibitors. Specifically, vanadate, and pervanadate (a general term for the variety of complexes formed between vanadate and hydrogen peroxide) were shown to inhibit the protein-tyrosine phosphatase PTP1B (Huyer 1997$^{656}$).

PTPs dephosphorylate and deactivate ERK (see above). As general PTP inhibitors, vanadate and vanadate derivatives are expected to activate ERK, an observation reported in several studies (Wang 2000$^{657}$, Zhao 1996$^{658}$, Pandey 1995$^{659}$, D’Onofrio 1994$^{660}$).

(a) F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 is GABP stimulated gene

The bifunctional enzyme 6-phosphofructo-2-kinase (EC 2.7.1.105, PFK-2)/fructose-2,6-bisphosphatase (EC 3.1.3.46 FBPase-2) catalyzes the synthesis and
degradation of fructose-2,6-bisphosphate. The rat PFK-2/FBPase-2 gene (gene A) codes for the fetal (F), muscle (M), and liver (L) mRNAs. Each of these mRNAs originates from a different promoter in the gene. The F-type promoter includes an enhancer in the (-1809-1615) region with three N-boxes at (-1747-1742), (-1716-1710) and (-1693-1688) (Darville 1992\textsuperscript{661}, Fig. 4). The enhancer stimulated transcription, especially in FTO2B hepatoma cells (Ibid, Table 1). DNase I protection experiments using the enhancer and extracts from FTO2B cell, from C2C12 myoblasts or myocytes, or from liver, but not from muscle, showed one specific footprint corresponding to the middle N-box (Ibid, Fig. 5). Gel retardation assays with extracts from FTO2B and HTC cells, L6 myoblasts and myocytes, and liver, but not muscle, showed a major complex (Ibid, Fig. 6A). When this enhancer fragment was methylated at single purines using dimethylsulfate and subsequently incubated with FTO2B extracts, three contact points were detected within the N-box (Ibid, Fig 4). The three points of methylation interference coincide with contact points identified by the same technique in the two N-boxes of the adenovirus E1A core enhancer which binds GABP. A subsequent study (Dupriez 1993\textsuperscript{662}) showed that changing the GG, essential for ets DNA binding, to CC in both distal and proximal N-boxes decreased promoter activity by 15-20\%. Changing GG to CC in the middle N-box decreased promoter activity by 75\%. The study also showed that anti-GABP\(\alpha\) and anti-GABP\(\beta\) antibodies inhibited formation of complexes on the middle N-box by FTO2B proteins (Ibid, Fig 4, lane 5 and 6). Transfection with recombinant GABP\(\alpha\) and GABP\(\beta\) produced shifts that comigrated with these complexes and were inhibited by anti-GABP\(\alpha\) antibodies (Ibid, Fig 4, lane 12-16). These observations suggest that the F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 is a GABP stimulated gene.

GABP viruses micro compete with the F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 enhancer for GABP. Therefore, viral infection of cells decreases F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 expression. Moreover, the higher the concentration of viral DNA, the greater the decrease in F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 expression.

\(\text{(a) Vanadate stimulates F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 transcription}\)
ERK activation is expected to stimulate transcription of GABP stimulated genes. The rat F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 gene is a GABP stimulated gene. Therefore, vanadate should stimulate transcription of F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2. Consider the following studies.

The effect of sodium orthovanadate by oral administration on liver PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA content was measured in rats with streptozotocin (STZ)-induced diabetes. The mRNA content was measured after 3, 5, 7 and 15 days of treatment. The results are presented in figure 49 (Miralpeix 1992, Fig. 3).

Vanadate treatment of diabetic animals produced a progressive increase in liver PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA content, reaching a nearly normal level after 15 days. Similar results are reported by Inoue (1994).

The F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 is usually not expressed in liver cells. However, the F-type mRNA levels increase in proliferating cells. Dupriez, et al., (1995) measured tissue expression of the gene. F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA was present in hepatoma, fibroblast, and myoblasts cell lines. The mRNA was found in fetal liver and muscle, the two fetal tissues examined. In adult tissues the mRNA was found in the lung and thymus.

In the other adult tissues tested the mRNA was present at much lower concentrations or was undetectable. The highest concentration was in preterm placenta, with a decrease at term. The concentration decreased upon differentiation of L6 myoblasts into myocytes (Ibid, Fig. 2) and in Rat-1 fibroblasts made quiescent by lowering serum concentration in culture from 10 to 0.1%. Moreover, F-type mRNA concentration increased in FTO2B cells upon dexamethasone treatment. Based on these observations, Dupriez, et al., concluded that the “expression of the F-type mRNA appears to correlate with cell proliferation.”

Usually, liver tissue shows limited cell proliferation. However, in the Miralpeix 1992 study (see above), vanadate was administered to male Sprague-Dawley rats one week after the animals were treated with a single intravenous injection of streptozotocin (STZ). As it turns out, STZ injection to Sprague-Dawley rats induces high levels of hepatocyte proliferation. Consider the following study.
Hepatocyte proliferation was measured in Sprague-Dawley rats made diabetic by iv injection of STZ. The results showed a 12% increase in the ratio of liver weight to body weight in diabetic rats 8 days after injection compare to normal rats, and a 44% increase at 30 days (Herrman 1999\textsuperscript{665}). The results also showed an increase in hepatocyte mitosis to 300% of normal at 8 days, a return to normal at 30 days, and a decrease to 25% of normal at 90 days (Ibid, Fig. 1). Based on these results Herrman, \textit{et al.}, concluded that “hepatomegaly observed in streptozotocin-induced experimental diabetes may be due primarily to early hyperplasia.”

The Miralpeix 1992 study used a “1.4 kilobase rat liver PFK-2/FBPase-2 cDNA probe which corresponds to the mRNA for liver PFK-2/FBPase-2 devoid of the 5’ end coding for amino acids 1-90.” This probe does not distinguish between F-type and L-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA. Therefore, the reported increase in PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA is, most likely, a result of the increase in F-type PFK-2/FBPase-2 mRNA in hepatocytes induced to proliferate by a streptozotocin injection.

\begin{itemize}
\item[(4)] \textbf{Effect on clinical symptoms}
\item[(a)] \textit{Obesity}

Five week-old Zucker rats, an animal model of obesity and insulin resistance, were divided into three groups of 6 rats: lean (Fa/fa) control, obese (fa/fa) control and obese (fa/fa)-vanadate treated. The rats in the treated group received sodium orthovanadate through drinking water for four months. Obese rats had significantly higher body weight compared to lean controls. However, body weight of vanadate-treated obese decreased 43% to levels comparable to lean controls (Pugazhenthithi 1995\textsuperscript{667}, Table 1).

Similar results were reported by McNeill and Orvig (1996\textsuperscript{668}). Wistar rats were divided into two groups, control (8 animals) and treated (11 animals). Treated animals received between 0.3 and 0.5 mmol/kg of bis(maltolato)oxovanadium/day in drinking water over a 77 day period. Beginning at day 56 the treated animals showed reduced weight gain compared to controls (Ibid, Fig. 1, group 2 vs. group 1). (See also Dai 1994\textsuperscript{669}, and Bhanot 1994\textsuperscript{670}).
\item[(b)] \textit{Cancer}
\end{itemize}
Cruz, et al., (1995) tested the antineoplastic effect of orthovanadate on a subcutaneous MDAY-D2 tumor mouse model. Ten week old DBA/2j female mice were injected subcutaneously in the posterior lateral side with $4 \times 10^5$ cells in 100 µl of PBS. On day 5, the mice were divided into two groups. One group received subcutaneous injections of 100 µl of PBS and another group received 100 µl of PBS containing 500 µg of orthovanadate daily. The orthovanadate was administrated subcutaneously on the opposite, tumor-free, posterior lateral side. On day 14, the mice were sacrificed, weighed and tumors were resected and weighed. The results showed decreased tumor growth in treated mice compared to controls (Ibid, Fig. 6). In control mice, the tumor weights varied from 0.86-1.74 g, whereas in orthovanadate treated mice, four mice showed no detectable tumors and 11 mice showed tumors varying from 0.08-0.47 g. Orthovanadate treatment reduced tumor growth by more than 85%, sometimes completely inhibiting tumor formation.

Another study tested the chemoprotective effect of vanadium against chemically induced hepatocarcinogenesis in rats. Initiation was performed by a single intraperitoneal injection of diethylnitrosamine (DENA; 200 mg kg$^{-1}$) followed by promotion with phenobarbital (0.05%) in diet. Vanadium (0.5 ppm) was provided ad libitum throughout the experiment in drinking water. The results showed that after 20 weeks vanadium reduced the incidence (P < 0.01), total number and multiplicity (P < 0.001), and altered the size distribution of visible persistent nodules (PNs) as compared with DENA controls (Bishayee and Chatterjee 1995). Mean nodular volume (P < 0.05) and nodular volume as a percent of liver volume (P < 0.01) were also attenuated. Vanadium also caused a large decrease in number (P < 0.001) and surface area (P < 0.01) of gamma-glutamyltranspeptidase (GGT)-positive hepatocyte foci and in labeling index (P < 0.001) of focal cells, coupled with increased (P < 0.01) remodeling. The activity of GGT, measured quantitatively, was found to be significantly less in PNs (P < 0.001) and non-nodular surrounding parenchyma (P < 0.01) of vanadium supplemented rats. Histopathological analysis of liver sections showed well-maintained hepatocellular architecture compared to DENA control. Based on these results, Bishayee and Chatterjee (1995) concluded that “our results, thus, strongly suggest that vanadium may have a unique anti-tumor potential.”
See also Liasko 1998\textsuperscript{673}.

\textbf{(c) Diabetes}

Numerous \textit{in vivo} studies demonstrated reduced blood glucose in insulin deficient diabetic animals, and improved glucose homeostasis in obese, insulin-resistant diabetic animals, following treatment with vanadate. In human studies, insulin sensitivity improved in NIDDM patients and in some IDDM patient after treatment with vanadate (see recent reviews Goldfine 1995\textsuperscript{674}, Brichard 1995\textsuperscript{675}).

As an example consider the study by Pugazhenthii, \textit{et al.}, (1995, see above). This study also tested the effect of vanadate on diabetes. The obese Zucker rats showed elevated plasma levels of glucose and insulin. Vanadate treatment decreased plasma glucose and insulin levels by 36\% and 80\%, respectively (Ibid, Table 1).

\textbf{d) PTP1B knockout}

(1) Effect on PTP and ERK

Gene knockout is a special case of intervention. The results of a PTP1B gene knockout is PTP1B enzyme deficiency. Vanadate inhibits PTP1B (Huyer 1997\textsuperscript{676}). Therefore, both PTP1B gene knockout and administration of vanadate result in reduced activity of the PTP1B enzyme. Considering the discussion above, the PTP1B gene knockout effect on clinical symptoms should be similar to the effects of vanadate treatment.

(2) Effect on clinical symptoms

(a) Obesity

A targeting vector was designed to delete a segment of the mouse homolog of the PTP1B gene. This segment included exon 5 and the tyrosine phosphatase active site in exon 6. The deleted segments were replaced with the neomycin resistance gene. Two separate embryonic stem cell clones that had undergone homologous recombination and possessed a single integration event were microinjected Balb/c blastocysts. Chimeric males were mated with wild-type Balb/c females, and heterozygotes from this cross were mated to produce animals homozygous for the PTP1B mutation (Elchebly 1999\textsuperscript{677}, Fig 1A). The PTP1B protein was absent in PTP1B null mice (PTP1B\textsuperscript{-/-}), and heterozygotes
(PTP1B(+/−)) expressed about half the amount of PTP1B relative to wild type mice (Ibid, Fig. 1B). PTP1B null mice grew normally on regular diet, did not show any significant difference in weight gain compared to wild-type mice and lived longer than 1.5 years without any signs of abnormality and were fertile. To study the effect of PTP1B gene knockout on obesity, PTP1B(−/−), PTP1B(+/−) and wild type mice were fed a high-fat diet normally resulting in obesity. As expected, the wild-type mice rapidly gained weight. In contrast, the PTP1B(−/−), PTP1B(+/−) mice were protected from the diet induced weight gain (Ibid, Fig. 5). Based on these results, Elchebly, et al., concluded that PTP1B deficiency results in obesity resistance.

Another study reported results of a PTP1B gene disruption. Klaman, et al., (2000678) generated PTP1B-null mice by targeted disruption of the ATG coding exon (exon 1). The PTP1B-deficient mice showed low adiposity and protection from diet-induced obesity. The decreased adiposity resulted from reduced fat cell mass without a decrease in adipocyte number. Leanness in PTP1B-deficient mice was associated with increased basal metabolic rate and total energy expenditure.

(b) Diabetes

Elchebly, et al., (1999679) also tested the effect of PTP1B gene knockout on diabetes. In the fed state, PTP(−/−) mice given a regular diet showed a 13% reduction and PTP(+/-) a 8% reduction in blood glucose concentration relative to wild type mice (Ibid, Fig. 2A). Fed PTP1B(−/−) mice on regular diet had circulating insulin levels of about half of wild type fed animals (Ibid, Fig. 2B). The enhanced insulin sensitivity of the PTP1B(−/−) mice was also observed in glucose and insulin tolerance tests (Ibid, Fig. 3A and 3B). The PTP1B(−/−), PTP1B(+/-) and wild type mice were also fed a high-fat diet normally resulting in insulin resistant. As expected, the wild-type mice became insulin resistant. In contrast, on a high-fat diet the PTP1B(−/−) mice showed glucose and insulin concentrations similar to animals on normal diet (Ibid, Table 1). PTP1B(−/−) mice also showed enhanced insulin sensitivity relative to wild type in both glucose and insulin tolerance tests (Ibid, Fig. 6A, 6B). On high-fat diet, the PTP1B(+/-) mice showed increased fasting concentrations of circulating insulin but similar fasting glucose concentrations relative to animals on normal diet (Ibid, Table 1). Based on these results, Elchebly, et al., concluded that PTP1B deficiency results in enhanced insulin sensitivity.
The PTP1B-deficient mice in Klaman, et al., (2000) showed similar enhanced insulin-stimulated whole-body glucose disposal.

As expected, both a PTP1B deficiency and vanadatetreatment result in resistance to obesity and enhanced insulin sensitivity. We speculate that PTP1B gene knockout, in a manner similar to vanadate treatment, also induces cancer resistance.

2. Antioxidants

Microcompetition and oxidative stress both decrease binding of GABP to the N-box. Therefore, microcompetition can be viewed as “excessive oxidative stress.” Some antioxidants reduce intracellular oxidative stress. These antioxidants stimulate the binding of GABP to the N-box thereby attenuating the effect of microcompetition on transcription, resulting in slower progression of the microcompetition diseases.

a) Garlic

(1) Effect on oxidative stress

Garlic is a scavenger of free radicals. A study investigated, using high pressure liquid chromatography, the ability of unheated or heated garlic extract to scavenge hydroxyl radical (•OH) generated by photolysis of H₂O₂ (1.2-10 µmoles/ml) with ultraviolet (UV) light and trapped with salicylic acid (500 nmole/ml). H₂O₂ produced •OH in a concentration-dependent manner as estimated by the •OH adduct products 2,3-dihydroxybenzoic acid (DHBA) and 2,5-DHBA. Garlic extract (5-100 µl/ml) inhibited (30-100%) 2,3-DHBA and 2,5-DHBA production in a concentration-dependent manner (Prasad 1996, Fig. 3). Garlic activity was reduced by 10% approximately, when heated to 100 degrees C for 20, 40 or 60 min. Garlic extract also prevented the •OH-induced formation of malondialdehyde (MDA) in rabbit liver homogenate in a concentration-dependent manner (Ibid, Fig. 10). In the absence of •OH, garlic did not affect MDA levels. Based on these results, Pasas, et al., (1996) concluded that “garlic extract is a powerful scavenger of •OH.”

Another study examined the antioxidant effects of garlic extract in a cellular system using bovine pulmonary artery endothelial cells (PAEC) and murine macrophages
The study used intracellular glutathione (GSH) depletion as an index of oxidative stress. Oxidized LDL (Ox-LDL) caused a depletion of GSH. Pretreatment with aged garlic extract inhibited Ox-LDL induced peroxides in PAEC and suppressed peroxides in macrophages in a dose-dependent manner (Ide 1999682). In a cell free system, the aged garlic extract was shown to scavenge H$_2$O$_2$ similarly. These results together show that aged garlic extract prevents the Ox-LDL induced depletion of GSH in endothelial cells and macrophages.

(2) Effect on clinical symptoms

(a) Atherosclerosis

Garlic attenuates the formation of atherosclerotic plaque. A study involved the deendothelialization of the right carotid artery of 24 rabbits by balloon catheterization in order to produce myointimal thickening. After 2 weeks the rabbits were randomly assigned to four groups: Group I received a standard diet (standard); Group II received standard diet supplemented with 800 µl/kg body weight/day of the aged garlic extract "Kyolic" (standard + Kyolic); Group III received a standard diet supplemented with 1% cholesterol (cholesterol-enriched); and Group IV received standard diet supplemented with 1% cholesterol and Kyolic (cholesterol-enriched + Kyolic). After 6 weeks, the cholesterol-enriched diet caused a 6-fold increase in serum cholesterol levels (Group III) compared to standard diet (Group I) (P < 0.05) (Efendy 1997683, Fig. 1). At 6 weeks, the cholesterol-enriched diet (Group III) showed fatty streak lesions covering approximately 70 ± 8% of the surface area of the thoracic aorta. The cholesterol-enriched + Kyolic group (Group IV) showed fatty lesions in only 25 ± 3% of the same surface area (Ibid, Fig. 2A and 2B), which represents a reduction of about 64%. No lesions were present in Groups I and II. The cholesterol-enriched diet also caused an increase in aortic arch cholesterol (2.1 ± 0.1 mg cholesterol/g tissue) which was significantly reduced by Kyolic (1.7 ± 0.2 mg cholesterol/g tissue) (P < 0.05). Kyolic significantly inhibited the development of thickened, lipid-filled lesions in the pre-formed neointimas produced by balloon-catheter injury of the right carotid artery in cholesterol-fed rabbits (intima as percent of artery wall, Group III 42.6 ± 6.5% versus Group IV 23.8 ± 2.3%, P < 0.01). Kyolic had little effect in rabbits on a standard diet (Group II 18.4 ± 5.0% versus Group I 16.7 ± 2.0%). In vitro studies showed that Kyolic inhibited smooth muscle proliferation (Ibid, Fig. 5). Based on
these results, Efendy, et al., (1997) concluded that “Kyolic treatment reduces fatty streak development, vessel wall cholesterol accumulation and the development of fibro fatty plaques in neointimas of cholesterol-fed rabbits, thus providing protection against the onset of atherosclerosis.”

Jain (1978\textsuperscript{684}), Jain (1976\textsuperscript{685}) and Bordia (1975\textsuperscript{686}) reported similar observations. Jain (1978) and Jain (1976) used rabbits fed a 16 week standard or cholesterol-enriched diet supplemented with or without garlic extract. In both studies the results showed marked atherosclerotic lesions in animals fed a cholesterol-enriched diet relative to standard diet. The animals fed a cholesterol-enriched diet supplemented with garlic extract showed attenuated lesion formation. Jain (1978) also reported reduced aorta cholesterol content in garlic treated animals. Bordia (1975) used rabbits fed for 3 months on similar diets. The results showed that garlic attenuated the formation of atherosclerotic plaque and the increase in lipid content of aorta.

Garlic treatment resulted in other favorable effects associated with attenuated atherosclerosis. A study measured the elastic properties of the aorta using pulse wave velocity (PWV) and pressure-standardized elastic vascular resistance (EVR) techniques. The subjects included healthy adults (n = 101; age 50 to 80 years) who were taking 300 mg/d or more of standardized garlic powder for at least 2 years and 101 age- and sex-matched controls. Blood pressure, heart rate, and plasma lipid levels were similar in the two groups. The results showed that PWV (8.3 ± 1.46 versus 9.8 ± 2.45 m/s; \textit{P} < 0.0001) and EVR (0.63 ± 0.21 versus 0.9 ± 0.44 m\textsuperscript{2}\textit{•}s\textsuperscript{-2}\textit{•}mm Hg\textsuperscript{-1}; \textit{P} < 0.0001) were lower in the garlic group than in the control group (Breithaupt-Glogler 1997\textsuperscript{687}, Table 1, Fig. 1). PWV showed significant positive correlation with age (garlic group, \textit{r} = 0.44; control group, \textit{r} = 0.52, Fig. 3) and systolic blood pressure (SBP) (garlic group, \textit{r} = 0.48; control group, \textit{r} = 0.54, Fig. 4). With any degree of increase in age or SBP, PWV increased less in the garlic group than in the control group (\textit{P} < 0.0001, Fig. 3, Fig. 4). ANCOVA and multiple regression analyses demonstrated that age and SBP were the most important determinants of PWV and that the effect of garlic on PWV was independent of confounding factors. According to Breithaupt-Glogler, et al., (1997), “The data suggested that the elastic properties of the aorta were maintained better in the garlic group that in the control group.” It is interesting that in experimental animals, changes of ratio of intimal (plaque)
area to medial area during progression and regression of atherosclerosis correlated with changes in indices of aortic elastic properties. Pregression of atherosclerosis resulted in higher PWV, and vice versa (Farrar 1991\textsuperscript{688}).

See also studies in the special supplement of the British Journal of Clinical Practice (1990, Supplement 69) dedicated to the clinical effects of garlic in ischemic heart disease.

Microcompetition increases the transcription of P-selectin in endothelial cells, increases the transcription of tissue factor (TF) and decreases the transcription of $\beta_2$ integrin and $\alpha_4$ integrin in macrophages and decreases the transcription of retinoblastoma susceptibility gene (Rb) in smooth muscle cells (SMC). Garlic reduces oxidative stress in endothelial cells, macrophages and SMCs. The reduced oxidative stress stimulates the binding of GABP to these genes, decreasing the transcription of TF and P-selectin and increasing the transcription of $\beta_2$ integrin, $\alpha_4$ integrin and Rb. Changes in the transcription levels of these genes attenuates the formation of atherosclerotic plaque and the thickening of the aortic intima.

(b) Cancer

The anticancer properties of garlic were recognized thousands of years ago. The ancient Egyptians used garlic externally for treatment of tumors. Hippocrates and physicians in ancient India are also reported to have used garlic externally for cancer treatment. Recent studies confirmed these properties. See, for instance, the section "Garlic, Onions and Cancer," in the recent review by Ali, \textit{et al.}, (2000\textsuperscript{689}), the meta-analysis of the epidemiologic literature on garlic consumption and the risk of stomach and colon cancer (Fleischauer 2000\textsuperscript{690}), and specific animals studies demonstrating garlic suppression of chemically induced tumors (Singh 1998\textsuperscript{691}, Singh 1996\textsuperscript{692}).

3. Viral N-box agents

A viral N-box agent reduces the number of active viral N-boxes in the host cell. The reduction can be accomplished by an overall reduction in the copy number of viral genomes present, or by inhibition of viral N-boxes (for instance by antisense), etc. The
reduced number of active viral N-boxes eases microcompetition and consequently slows progression of the microcompetition diseases.

\[ \text{a) Direct antiviral agents} \]

\[ (1) \quad \text{Ganciclovir} \]

\[ (a) \quad \text{Effect on viral DNA elongation} \]

Ganciclovir (Cytovene, DHPG) is a guanosine analogue. The prodrug is phosphorylated by thymidine kinase to the active triphosphate form after uptake into the infected cell. The triphosphate form inhibits viral DNA polymerase by competing with cellular deoxyguanosine triphosphate for incorporation into viral DNA causing chain termination. Ganciclovir is effective against herpes simplex virus 1 and 2 (HSV-1, HSV-2), cytomegalovirus (CMV), Epstein- Barr virus (EBV) and varicella-zoster virus (Spector 1999\textsuperscript{693}).

Aciclovir (acyclovir) and its oral form valacyclovir, and penciclovir and its oral form famciclovir are guanosine analogues similar to ganciclovir. These drugs are also effective against HSV-1, HSV-2 and CMV. See, for instance, a recent meta-analysis of 30 aciclovir clinical trials in HSV infections (Leflore 2000\textsuperscript{694}), a review on aciclovir recommended treatments in HSV infections (Kesson 1998\textsuperscript{695}), reviews on valaciclovir effectiveness in HSV and CMV infections (Ormord 2000\textsuperscript{696}, Bell 1999\textsuperscript{697}) and a review of famciclovir and penciclovir (Sacks 1999\textsuperscript{698}).

\[ (b) \quad \text{Effect on latent viral DNA load} \]

The load of viral DNA during latent infection is directly correlated with the extent of viral replication during the preceding productive infection (Reddehase 1994\textsuperscript{699}, Collins 1993\textsuperscript{700}). Therefore, reduction of viral replication should reduce the load of viral DNA during a subsequent latent infection. Consider the following studies.

Bone marrow transplantation (BMT) was performed as a syngeneic BMT with female BALB/c (H-2\textsuperscript{b}) mice used at the age of 8 weeks as both bone marrow donors and recipients. Two hours after BMT, the mice were infected subcutaneously in the left hind footpad with murine CMV. The mice were then divided into four groups. Three groups
received therapy with increasing doses of CD8 T cells. The forth groups served as controls. The results showed that increasing doses of CD8 T cells significantly reduced the extent and duration of virus replication in vital organs, such as lungs and adrenal glands (Steffens 1998701, Fig 2). Moreover, 12 months after BMT, the viral DNA load was measured. The results showed that the amount of DNA was smaller in the groups given CD8 T cell therapy. The viral DNA load in the lungs of mice given no immunotherapy was 5,000 viral genomes per $10^6$ lung cells. The load following treatment with $10^5$ and $10^6$ CD8 T cells was 3,000 and 1,000 per $10^6$ lung cells, respectively. Since there were no infectious virus present, the study shows that attenuated viral replication during the acute phase of infection reduces the load of viral DNA during the subsequent latent phase of infection.

The study also measured the recurrence of viral infection following therapy. Five latently infected mice with no therapy and five mice treated with $10^7$ CD8 T cells were subjected to immunoablative γ-ray treatment of 6.5 Gy. Recurrence of viral infectivity was measured 14 days later in separate lobes of the lungs. The group receiving no therapy showed a high latent DNA load and recurrence of infectivity in all five mice in all five lobes of the lungs (with some variance). In contrast, the group receiving CD8T cells showed low viral load and recurrence of infectivity in only two mice and only in a single lobe in each mouse (Steffens 1998, Fig 7). These results show that a reduction in viral replication reduces latent viral DNA load and the probability viral disease.

Thackray and Field, in a series of studies, also tested the effect of preemptive therapy against viral infection. However, instead of CD8 T cells, the studies administered famciclovir (FCV), valaciclovir (VACV), or human immunoglobulin (IgG) to mice infected via the ear pinna or the left side of the neck with either HSV-1 or HSV-2 (Thackray 2000A702, Thackray 2000B703, Thackray 2000C704, Field 2000705, Thackray 1998706). The results showed that 9-10 days of FCV treatment early in infection was effective in limiting the establishment of viral latency several months after treatment. Based on their results, Field and Thackray conclude that “Thus, the implication of our results is that even intensive antiviral therapy starting within a few hour of exposure is unlikely to completely abrogate latency. However, our results also show a significant
reduction in the number of foci that are established and imply that there may also be a quantitative reduction in the latent genomes.” (Field 2000).

Another study compared the effect of aciclovir (ACV) and immunoglobulin (IgG) preemptive therapy on mice infected via scarified corneas with HSV-1. Both therapies were administered for 7 days commencing on the first day post infection. The results showed that ACV treatment resulted in a reduced copy number of latent HSV-1 genome on day 44 post infection relative to IgG (LeBlanc 1999707, Fig 5). Since no untreated mice survived the infection, the study could not compare ACV treatment to no treatment. However, if we assume that IgG treatment either reduced or did not change the copy number of latent viral genomes, we can conclude that the ACV preemptive treatment resulted in a reduced load of latent viral DNA.

Ganciclovir is similar to aciclovir and penciclovir. Therefore, a reasonable conclusion from these studies is that preemptive treatment with ganciclovir will also reduce the load of viral DNA.

(c) Effect on clinical symptoms

(i) Atherosclerosis

Accelerated coronary atherosclerosis can be observed in the donor heart following heart transplantation (TxCAD). Transplanting a heart from a CMV seropositive donor to a seronegative recipient increases the probability of a primary infection in the recipient (Bowden 1991708, Chou 1988709, Chou 1987710, Chou 1986711, Grundy 1988712, Grundy 1987713, Grundy 1986714). The Thackary and LeBlanc studies demonstrated that administration of aciclovir or penciclovir prophylaxis early in primary infection reduces the load of the subsequent latent viral DNA in the infected animals (see above). Since microcompetition between viral and cellular DNA results in atherosclerosis, prophylactic administration of ganciclovir, a drug similar to aciclovir and penciclovir, early after heart transplantation, should reduce atherosclerosis. Consider the following study.

One hundred and forty-nine consecutive patients (131 men and 18 women, aged 48 ± 13 years) randomly received either ganciclovir or placebo. The study drug was commenced on the first postoperative day and was administered for 28 days. In 22% of
patients drug administration was delayed by up to 6 days due to acute-care problems. Immunosuppression consisted of muromonab-CD3 (OKT-3) prophylaxis and maintenance with cyclosporine, prednisone, and azathioprine. Coronary angiography was performed annually after heart transplantation. Mean follow-up time was 4.7 ± 1.3 years. TxCAD was defined as the presence of any angiographic disease irrespective of severity because of the recognized underestimation of TxCAD by angiography. The actuarial incidence of TxCAD was determined from these annual angiograms and from autopsy data. CMV infection was determined in recipient and donor. The results showed that actuarial incidence of TxCAD at follow-up was 43 ± 8% in patients treated with ganciclovir compared with 60 ± 11% in placebo group (P < 0.1). Moreover, the protective effect of ganciclovir was even more evident when the population of CMV seronegative recipients was considered exclusively. Of the 14 CMV seronegative recipients randomized to prophylactic ganciclovir, 4 (28%), developed TxCAD compared with 9 (69%) of the seronegative patients randomized to placebo (Valantine 1999715). The effect of ganciclovir is less evident in the population as a whole since among seropositive recipients there was no difference between ganciclovir and placebo. TxCAD developed in 22 (47%) of 48 patients randomized to ganciclovir compared with 21 (47%) of 46 in the placebo group. Base on these results, Valantine, et al., concluded that “prophylactic treatment with ganciclovir initiated immediately after heart transplantation reduces the incidence of TxCAD.”

It is interesting to note that in a multivariate analysis, the study found that the variable “CMV illness” was not an independent predictor of TxCAD when “lack of ganciclovir” and “donor age” were included in the analysis. We suspect that high correlation (multicollinearity) between “lack of ganciclovir” and “CMV illness” produced this result. Such a correlation was demonstrated in numerous studies. See, for instance, table 5 in Sia (2000716), which lists 10 clinical studies showing that early administration of ganciclovir prophylaxis in solid-organ transplantation resulted in reduced CMV disease compared to no treatment, administration of placebo, treatment with immunoglobulin or treatment with acyclovir. From this correlation we deduce that Valantine (1999) also measured reduced CMV disease (the study is mute on this statistic). The key parameter that determines the overall and organ-specific risks of CMV disease is the copy number of
latent viral genomes in various tissues (Reddehase 1994\textsuperscript{717}). Therefore, the reduced CMV disease indicates a reduction in the copy number of latent viral genome, which, again, explains the reduction in observed atherosclerosis.

\begin{enumerate}
\item (2) Zidovudine (AZT), didanosine (ddI), zalcitabine (ddC)
\end{enumerate}

\textbf{(a) Effect on viral DNA elongation}

Didanosine (2',3'-dideoxyinosine, ddI) is a synthetic purine nucleoside analogue used against HIV infection. After passive diffusion into the cell, the drug undergoes phosphorylation by cellular (rather than viral, see above) enzymes to dideoxyadenosine-5'-triphosphate (ddATP), the active moiety. ddATP competes with the natural substrate for HIV-1 reverse transcriptase (deoxyadenosine 5'-triphosphate) and cellular DNA polymerase. Because ddATP lacks the 3'-hydroxyl group present in the naturally occurring nucleoside, incorporation into viral DNA leads to termination of DNA chain elongation and inhibition of viral DNA growth (see a recent review of ddI in Perry 1999\textsuperscript{718}).

Zidovudine (retrovir, ZDV, AZT) and zalcitabine (ddC) are nucleosides similar to ddI.

\textbf{(b) Effect on latent viral DNA load}

A study measured the change in HIV-1 DNA and RNA load relative to baseline in 42 antiretroviral naive HIV-1 infected persons treated with either AZT monotherapy, a combination of AZT + ddC or a combination of AZT + ddI over a period of 80 weeks. Figure 50 presents the results (Breisten 1998\textsuperscript{719}, Fig 1A).

At week 80, AZT treatment alone was associated with an increase, ddC + AZT with a small decrease and ddI + AZT with a larger decrease in viral DNA. To compare the results statistically, the mean log change from baseline over all time points was compared between ddI + AZT and ddC + AZT. The mean change was -0.3375 and -0.20458 for ddI + AZT and ddC + AZT, respectively (P = 0.02). It is interesting that, although not significant statistically (P = 0.29), rank order of the ddI + AZT and ddC + AZT effect on RNA is reversed, that is, the mean effect of ddC + AZT on viral RNA was larger than ddI.
+ AZT. Since the combination therapy of AZT and ddC is additive (Magnani 1997\cite{720}), the ddC monotherapy effect on viral DNA was calculated as the ddC + AZT effect minus the AZT monotherapy effect. The calculated effect of ddC monotherapy on viral DNA was compared to the effect of AZT monotherapy. The mean log change from baseline over all time points was -0.15458 and -0.05 for ddC and AZT, respectively (P = 0.09). The statistical analysis suggests that the ranking of ddI > ddC > AZT in terms of their effect on viral DNA, is significant. Moreover, the results suggest that at later time points, AZT tend to be associated with increased levels of viral DNA.

This statistical analysis is different from the analysis reported by Bruisten, et al (1986). To test whether an "early" response occurred, Bruisten, et al., averaged the values of weeks 4, 8, and 12 and for a "late" response the values of weeks 32, 40, and 48. The test showed that only the ddI + AZT treatment decreased the HIV-1 viral DNA "early" and "late." The P value of "early" compared to baseline is 0.002, the p value of "late" compare to baseline is 0.052. The same values for ddC + AZT are 0.191 and 0.08. These values also indicate that ddI is more effective than ddC in reducing viral DNA.

Another study (Pauza 1994\cite{721}) measured the total viral DNA by polymerase chain reaction (PCR) assays for viral LTR sequences in 51 HIV infected patients. This assay detects linear, circular, and integrated HIV-1 DNA and also includes preintegration complexes that completed the first translocation step. Twenty patients were treated with AZT, 4 patients with ddI and 7 patients with ddC. After Southern blotting and hybridization, fragments were excised from the membrane and bound radioactivity was determined by scintillation counting. The measured LTR DNA levels were expressed on a scale of 1 to 5 (1 is lowest). Negative samples were labeled zero. The average ranking of viral DNA load for patients treated with ddI, ddC and AZT, was 2.25, 2.71 and 2.74, respectively. The difference between ddC and AZT is small. However, the average CD4/\(\mu\)l count for ddC and AZT treated patients was 82 and 191.55, respectively (p < 0.03 for the difference). Hence, the viral DNA load of the AZT group is most likely biased downward. Overall, this ranking of treatment effectiveness measured in terms of reduced viral DNA load is identical to the ranking in Breisten 1998 above.
A third study (Chun 1997\textsuperscript{722}) measured total HIV-1 DNA in 9 patients. Eight patients were on triple therapy including two nucleosides and one protease inhibitor. One patient received two nucleosides and two protease inhibitors. Six patients had undetectable plasma HIV RNA. The other three patients had 814, 2,800 and 6,518 copies/ml. The study also reports the year of seroconversion. A regression analysis with viral DNA level as dependent variable and number of years since seroconversion as independent variable produces the results shown in figure 51:

Viral DNA load = 9,909 + 142 \times \text{Years since seroconversion}

The viral DNA load is measured in copies of HIV-1 DNA per 10\textsuperscript{5} resting CD4\textsuperscript{+} T cells. The p values for the intercept and coefficient are 1.31E-05 and 0.131481, respectively. Since the sample size is small, the p value for the coefficient is considered as borderline significant, which means that even with triple and quadruple therapies, and in patients with mostly undetectable plasma HIV RNA, viral DNA load increases with an increase in the number of years since seroconversion.

The difference between the expected and the observed number of viral DNA copies was calculated for each patient. The therapy of two patients included ddI and the average difference for these patients was -828 copies. The therapy of five patients included AZT and the average difference for these patients was +317 copies. These results suggest that ddI is associated with a decrease and AZT with an increase in the number of viral DNA copies in this group of patients.

Under different conditions, with monotherapy, triple and quadruple therapy with a protease inhibitor and with detectable and undetectable RNA, the results are consistent. ddI is associated with a larger reduction in viral DNA load compared to ddC, and AZT is associated with an increase in viral DNA load.

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{(c)} \textit{Effect on clinical symptoms}
\item \textit{(i) Obesity}
\end{itemize}

A study observed 306 six HIV-infected women between December 1997 and February 1998 (Gervasoni 1999\textsuperscript{723}). The women were treated with two or more antiretroviral drugs. One hundred and sixty two patients were treated with two
nucleosides (double therapy) and 144 with three or more drugs including at least one protease inhibitor (PI) (triple therapy). Fat redistribution (FR) was confirmed by means of a physical examination and dual-energy X-ray absorptiometry (DEXA). FR was observed in 32 women (10.5%) (12 on double therapy, 20 on triple therapy). The body changes were reported to gradually emerge over a period of 12-72 weeks. A statistical analysis showed that a combination treatment which included ddI was significantly associated with the absence of FR ($P = 0.019$). A combination treatment which included ddC was also significantly associated with the absence of FR ($P = 0.049$). The $p$ values indicate that a ddI-including combination was more effective than a ddC-including therapy in preventing FR. Contrary to ddI and ddC, a combination therapy which included AZT was associated with a low risk of developing FR (OR 0.3).

The association between ddI-, ddC- and AZT-including therapeutic combinations with fat redistribution is consistent with their effect on reducing or increasing viral DNA load.

Another interesting observation in this study was that the longer median total duration of antiretroviral drug treatment in women with FR compared to those without FR (1,187 versus 395 days). Only one of the 32 women with FR received antiretroviral drug therapy for less than 1,000 days. The risk of FR for women under antiretroviral drug therapy for more than 1,000 days was 10 times greater than in those who received shorter drug therapy (OR 10.8, $P = 0.0207$).

A statistical analysis of the results in Chun 1997 (see above) showed that viral DNA load increases with an increase in the number of years since seroconversion. Since the duration of antiretroviral drug treatment most often increases with the number of years since seroconversion, longer duration correlates with higher viral DNA load. Higher viral DNA load results in more intense microcompetition, and therefore, fat redistribution.

(3) Garlic

(a) Effect on viral infectivity

(b) **Effect on clinical symptoms**

See above.

**b) Immune stimulating agents**

The balance between two forces, the virus drive to replicate, and the capacity of the immune system to control or clear the infection, determines the copy number of viral genome present in infected cells. A stable equilibrium between these two forces determines the copy number in a persistent and latent infections. A major determinant of the immune system capacity to clear or control and infection is the efficiency of the Th1 response. An increase in this efficiency reduces the viral copy number.

(1) **Infection with non-GABP viruses**

Data obtained in animals indicate that neonatal immune responses are biased toward Th2. Consider the effects of a productive infection with a GABP virus during early life. The extent of viral replication during productive infection determines the load of viral DNA during the subsequent latent infection (see discussion above). The lower the Th1 efficiency during the productive infection, the higher the copy number of viral genome in the subsequent latent period. Infection with some viruses, such as measles, hepatitis A, and Mycobacterium tuberculosis induce a strong polarized Th1-type response in early life. These infections reduce GABP virus replication and subsequent genome copy number during latent infection. The reduced copy number attenuates microcompetition, therefore, reducing the probability and severity of microcompetition diseases, such as, atopy, asthma, diabetes, cancer, atherosclerosis, osteoarthritis, obesity, etc. Consider the following studies.

BCG is a freeze-dried preparation made from a living culture of the Calmette-Guerin strain of mycobacterium Bovis. It was first developed as a vaccine against tuberculosis in 1921 but also has been used as an immunotherapeutic treatment for carcinoma. Vaccination with BCG induces a Th1-type immune response in human newborn and adults human (Marchant 1999\textsuperscript{26}). Moreover, BCG immunization prior to challenge with herpes simplex virus increased survival rate of newborn mice (Starr 1976\textsuperscript{27}). To investigate whether the prevalence of atopy is lower in children who have been vaccinated with BCG in infancy than in children who have not been vaccinated, a
study measured skin test reactivity to three allergens (Dermatophagoides pteronyssinus, D. farinae and cockroach) in 400 children, aged 3-14 years, in an urban area of Bissau, the capital of Guinea-Bissau in west Africa. The results showed that 57 (21%) of the vaccinated children were atopic (any reaction > or = 2 mm), compared with 21 (40%) of the unvaccinated children [odds ratio, after controlling for potential confounding factors, 0.19 (95% CI 0.06-0.59)]. When atopy was defined using the 3-mm criterion, the reduction in atopy associated with BCG was greater the earlier the age at vaccination, and the largest reduction was seen in children vaccinated in the first week of life (Aaby 2000\textsuperscript{728}). Based on these results, Aaby, et al., concluded that “BCG vaccination given early in infancy may prevent the development of atopy in African children.”

Results of numerous studies suggest that measles, hepatitis A, and Mycobacterium tuberculosis infection in early life may prevent subsequent development of atopic diseases. In humans, immunomodulation during the first two years of life is most successful in producing long-lasting prevention effects (von Hertzen 2000\textsuperscript{729}). See also von Mutisu 2000\textsuperscript{730}, von Hertzen 1999\textsuperscript{731}. As a result of this observed effect, there are currently attempts to use BCG as a vaccine for asthma (see review Scanga 2000\textsuperscript{732}).

A study evaluated the protective effect of repeated BCG vaccinations on preventing diabetes in NOD mice. The results showed that 17/32 (53%) of the control group, 8/31 (26%) of the single vaccine-treated (at age 35 days) mice, and 7/23 (30%) of the single vaccine-treated (at age 90 days) mice developed diabetes, and none of the repeated BCG vaccination (at age 35 & 90 days, n = 14) animals developed the disease, up to 250 days of age (p < 0.05, compared with controls and each of the single-vaccination groups). The repeated BCG vaccination reduced the severity of insulitis at age 120 days as compared with controls and single BCG-vaccination groups (Shehadeh 1997\textsuperscript{733}). On the relation between BCG immunization and type 1 diabetes, see also Qin 1997\textsuperscript{734}, Harada 1990\textsuperscript{735} and a recent review Hiltunen 1999\textsuperscript{736}.

Another study showed that an infection of NOD mice with Mycobacterium avium, before the mice show overt diabetes, results in permanent protection of the animals from diabetes. This protective effect was associated with increased numbers of CD4+ T cells and B220+ B cells (Martins 1999\textsuperscript{737}). The study also showed that the protection was
associated with changes in the expression of Fas (CD95) and FasL by immune cells, and alterations in cytotoxic activity, IFNγ and IL-4 production and activation of T cells of infected animals. Based on these results, Martins and Aguas concluded that the “data indicate that protection of NOD mice from diabetes is a Th1-type response that is mediated by up-regulation of the Fas-FasL pathway and involves an increase in the cytotoxicity of T cells.” See also Bras 1996\textsuperscript{738}.

(2) Breast feeding

Breast feeding increases the efficiency of the Th1 immune response. Consider the following studies.

A study measured the blast transformation and cytokine production by lymphocytes, and T cell changes of 59 formula-fed and 64 breast fed 12-month-old children blast, before and after measles-mumps-rubella vaccination (MMR). The results showed that before vaccination, lymphocytes of breast fed children had lower levels of blast transformation without antigen (p < 0.001), with tetanus toxoid (p < 0.02) or Candida (p < 0.04), and lower IFNγ production (p < 0.03). Fourteen days after live viral vaccination, only breast fed children had increased production of IFNγ (p < 0.02) and increased percentages of CD56+ (p < 0.022) and CD8+ cells (p < 0.004) (Pabst 1997\textsuperscript{739}). Based on these results, Pabst, \textit{et al.}, concluded that “these findings are consistent with a Th1 type response by breast fed children, not evident in formula-fed children. Feeding mode has an important long-term immunomodulating effect on infants beyond weaning.” See also the review Pabst 1997\textsuperscript{740}.

Another study showed immunophenotypic differences between breast-fed and formula-fed infants consistent with accelerated development of immune system in breast-fed infants (Hawkes 1999\textsuperscript{741}).

Since breast feeding increases the efficiency of the Th1 immune response, it should reduce the probability and severity of microcompetition diseases (see above for detail). Consider the following studies.

A study examined the association between breast feeding and type II diabetes (also called non-insulin-dependent diabetes, or NIDDM) in Pima Indians, a population with a
high prevalence of this disorder. Data were available for 720 Pima Indians aged between 10 and 39 years. 325 people who were exclusively bottle fed had significantly higher age-adjusted and sex-adjusted mean relative weights (146%) than 144 people who were exclusively breast fed (140%) or 251 people who had some breast feeding (139%) ($p = 0.019$). The results showed that people who were exclusively breast fed had significantly lower rates of NIDDM than those who were exclusively bottle fed in all age-groups. The odds ratio for NIDDM in exclusively breast fed people, compared with exclusively bottle fed, was 0.41 (95% CI 0.18-0.93) adjusted for age, sex, birth date, parental diabetes, and birth weight (Pettit 1997)$^{742}$. Based on these results Pettitt, et al., concluded that “exclusive breast feeding for the first 2 months of life is associated with a significantly lower rate of NIDDM in Pima Indians.”

Another study measured the impact of breast-feeding on overweight and obesity in children at school entry was assessed in a cross sectional study in Bavaria in 1997. The school entry health examination enrolled 134,577 children. Data on early feeding were collected in two rural districts (eligible population n=13,345). The analyses were confined to 5 or 6 year old children with German nationality. The study measured overweight (BMI>90th percentile for all German children seen at the 1997 school entry health examination in Bavaria) and obesity (BMI>97th percentile). Information on breast-feeding was available for 9,206 children of whom 56% had been breast-fed for any length of time. The results showed that in non breast-fed children the upper tail of the BMI distribution was enlarged as compared to the breast-fed children whereas the median was almost identical (von Kries 2000)$^{743}$. The prevalence of obesity in children who had never been breast-fed was 4.5% as compared to 2.8% in ever breast-fed children. A clear dose response effect for the duration of breast-feeding on the prevalence of obesity was found: 3.8%, 2.3%, 1.7% and 0.8% for exclusive breast-feeding for up to 2, 3 to 5, 6 to 12 and more than 12 months, respectively. The results for overweight were very similar. The protective effect of breast feeding on overweight and obesity could not be explained by differences in social class or lifestyle. The adjusted odds ratios of breast-feeding for any length of time was 0.71 (95% CI 0.56-0.90) for obesity and 0.77 (95%CI 0.66-0.88) for overweight. This data set did not allow to adjust for maternal weight, an important risk factor for obesity in children. Maternal overweight, however, could not explain the effect of breast feeding on overweight and obesity in a similar study. The reduction in the risk
for overweight and obesity is therefore more likely to be related to the properties of human milk than to factors associated with breast-feeding. See also von Kries 1999\textsuperscript{744}. 
Table of Cited References


10. Nuclear Respiratory Factor 2 should not be confused with NF-E2 Related Factor 2 which is also abbreviated NRF2 or NRF-2.


12. Enhancer Factor 1A should not be confused with Elongation Factor 1A which is also abbreviated EF-1A.


37 Hottiger MO, Felzien LK, Nabel GJ. Modulation of cytokine-induced HIV gene expression by competitive binding of transcription factors to the coactivator p300. EMBO J. 1998 Jun 1;17(11):3124-34.


41 LaMarco KL, McKnight SL. Purification of a set of cellular polypeptides that bind to the purine-rich cis-regulatory element of herpes simplex virus immediate early genes. Genes Dev 1989 3(9):1372-83.


52 Bruder JT, Hearing P. Cooperative binding of EF-1A to the E1A enhancer region mediates synergistic effects on E1A transcription during adenovirus infection. J Virol. 1991 Sep;65(9):5084-7.


107 Avots A, Hoffmeyer A, Flory E, Cimamis A, Rapp UR, Serfling E. GABP factors bind to a distal interleukin 2 (IL-2) enhancer and contribute to c-Raf-mediated increase in IL-2 induction. Molecular and Cellular Biology 17(8):4381-4389.


129 Key NS, Bach RR, Vercellotti GM, Moldow CF. Herpes simplex virus type I does not require productive infection to induce tissue factor in human umbilical vein endothelial cells. Lab Invest. 1993 Jun;68(6):645-51.


132 Bach RR, Moldow CF. Mechanism of tissue factor activation on HL-60 cells. Blood. 1997 May 1;89(9):3270-6.


203 Vossen RC, Persoons MC, Slobbe-van Drunen ME, Bruggeman CA, van Dam-

Micas


329 Key NS, Bach RR, Vercellotti GM, Moldow CF. Herpes simplex virus type I does not require productive infection to induce tissue factor in human umbilical vein endothelial cells. Lab Invest. 1993 Jun;68(6):645-51.


353 Crawford L. Criteria for establishing that a virus is oncogenic. Ciba Found Symp. 1986;120:104-16.


447 Luheishi GN, Gardner JD, Rushforth DA, Loudon AS, Rothwell NJ. Leptin actions on food intake and body temperature are mediated by IL-1. Proc Natl Acad Sci U S A 1999 Jun 8;96(12):7047-52.


Barratt-Boyce SM, Zimmer MI, Harshyne LA, Meyer EM, Watkins SC,

Capuano S,


Michelson D, Amsterdam JD, Quitkin FM, Reinherr FW, Rosenbaum JF,


Carr A, Copper DA. A randomized, multicenter study of protease inhibitor (PI) substitution in aviremic patients with antiretroviral (ARV) lipodystrophy syndrome. 7th Conference on Retroviruses and Opportunistic Infections. 2000 (Abstract).


668 McNeill JH, Orvig C. Bis(maltolato)oxovanadium compositions for the treatment of elevated blood sugar. US Pat No 5,527,790, June 18, 1996.


Thackray AM, Field HJ. Effects of famciclovir and valacyclovir on herpes simplex virus type 1 infection, latency, and reactivation in mice: how dissimilar are study results? J Infect Dis 2000 Apr;181(4):1517-8.


Valantine HA, Gao SZ, Menon SG, Renlund DG, Hunt SA, Oyer P, Stinson EB, Brown BW Jr, Merigan TC, Schroeder JS. Impact of prophylactic immediate posttransplant ganciclovir on development of


Accordingly, it is to be understood that the embodiments of the invention herein described are merely illustrative of the application of the principles of the invention. Reference herein to details of the illustrated embodiments is not intended to limit the scope of the claims, which themselves recite those features regarded as essential to the invention.
What is claimed is:

1. A method of treating adverse effects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising administering to a patient an effective amount of an agent selected from a group consisting of:
   a) an agent that increases concentration of a GABP stimulator;
   b) an agent that decreases concentration of a GABP suppressor;
   c) an agent that increases effectiveness of a GABP stimulator; and
   d) an agent that decreases effectiveness of a GABP suppressor.

2. The method of claim 1 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

3. The method of claim 1 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

4. The method of claim 1 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

5. The method of claim 1 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

6. A method of treating adverse effects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising administering an effective amount of an agent selected from a group consisting of:
   a) an agent that increases concentration of GABPα;
   b) an agent that increases concentration of GABPβ;
   c) an agent that decreases concentration of GABPγ;
   d) an agent that increases phosphorylation of GABP;
   e) an agent that increases affinity between GABP and p300/CBP;
   f) an agent that stimulates binding of GABP to DNA; and
   g) an agent that increases concentration of p300/CBP.

7. The method of claim 6 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.
8. The method of claim 6 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

9. The method of claim 6 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

10. The method of claim 6 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

11. A method of treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising administering an effective amount of an agent selected from a group consisting of:
   a) an agent that increases concentration of a GABP kinase;
   b) an agent that stimulates phosphorylation of a GABP kinase;
   c) an agent that increases affinity between GABP and GABP kinase;
   d) an agent that decreases oxidative effects on GABP; and
   e) an agent that decreases foreign DNA N-boxes in cells.

12. The method of claim 11 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

13. The method of claim 11 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

14. The method of claim 11 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

15. The method of claim 11 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

16. A method of treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising administering an effective amount of an agent that decreases oxidative effects on GABP.
17. The method of claim 16 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

18. The method of claim 16 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

19. The method of claim 16 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

20. The method of claim 16 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

21. A method of treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising administering an effective amount of an agent that decreases foreign DNA N-boxes in cells.

22. The method of claim 20 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

23. The method of claim 20 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

24. The method of claim 20 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

25. The method of claim 20 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

26. A method of identifying compounds to be tested for treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising:
   a) providing an assay capable of determining compounds that perform a function selected from a group consisting of:
      i) increases concentration of a GABP stimulator,
      ii) decreases concentration of a GABP suppressor,
      iii) increases effectiveness of a GABP stimulator, and
iv) an agent that decreases effectiveness of a GABP suppressor; and
b) running sample compounds through said assay and identifying any compound
that performs one of said functions as a compound to be tested.

27. The method of claim 26 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

28. The method of claim 26 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

29. The method of claim 26 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

30. The method of claim 26 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

31. A method of identifying compounds to be tested for treating adverse effects associated
with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising:
a) providing an assay capable of determining compounds that perform a function
selected from a group consisting of:
   i) increases concentration of GABPA, 
   ii) increases concentration of GABPB, 
   iii) decreases concentration of GABPG, 
   iv) increases phosphorylation of GABP, 
   v) increases affinity between GABP and p300/CBP, 
   vi) stimulates binding of GABP to DNA, and 
   vii) increases concentration of p300/CBP; and
b) running sample compounds through said assay and identifying any compound
   that performs one of said functions as a compound to be tested.

32. The method of claim 31 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

33. The method of claim 31 wherein said adverse effect associated with microcompetition
is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.
34. The method of claim 31 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

35. The method of claim 31 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

36. A method of identifying compounds to be tested for treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising:
   a) providing an assay capable of determining compounds that perform a function selected from a group consisting of:
      i) increases concentration of a GABP kinase,
      ii) stimulates phosphorylation of a GABP kinase, and
      iii) increases affinity between GABP and GABP kinase; and
   b) running sample compounds through said assay and identifying any compound that performs one of said functions as a compound to be tested.

37. The method of claim 36 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

38. The method of claim 36 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

39. The method of claim 36 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

40. The method of claim 36 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

41. A method of identifying compounds to be tested for treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising:
   a) providing an assay capable of determining compounds that decrease oxidative effect on GABP; and
   b) running sample compounds through said assay and identifying any compound that performs one of said functions as a compound to be tested.
42. The method of claim 41 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

43. The method of claim 41 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

44. The method of claim 41 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

45. The method of claim 41 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.

46. A method of identifying compounds to be tested for treating adverse affects associated with a disruption of GABP's metabolic pathway, comprising:
   a) providing an assay capable of determining compounds decreases foreign DNA N-boxes in cells; and
   b) running sample compounds through said assay and identifying any compound that performs one of said functions as a compound to be tested.

47. The method of claim 46 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is cancer and said patient is being treated for cancer.

48. The method of claim 46 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is atherosclerosis and said patient is being treated for atherosclerosis.

49. The method of claim 46 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is osteoarthritis and said patient is being treated for osteoarthritis.

50. The method of claim 46 wherein said adverse affect associated with microcompetition is obesity and said patient is being treated for obesity.
Figure 1

Figure 2
Figure 3

Figure 4
Figure 7

Figure 8
Figure 9

Sensitization

AGENT \(\rightarrow R_1 \rightarrow R_2 \ldots R_{n-1} \rightarrow R_n \rightarrow\) GABP \(\rightarrow\) C

\(\uparrow\) (1) \(\downarrow\) (4)
\(\uparrow\) (3)
\(\downarrow\) (5)

Feedback Inhibition

Sensitized receptor with downstream control

Figure 10

\begin{center}
\begin{tabular}{c}
\textbf{TF PCA (U/ml)}
\end{tabular}
\end{center}

- HSV-1
- LPS

\begin{center}
\begin{tabular}{c}
\textbf{Time (h)}
\end{tabular}
\end{center}

Figure 11
Figure 12

Figure 13

Arachidonic Acid

Cytochrome P450 + NADPH

Epoxidation

5,6-EET
8,9-EET
11,12-EET
14,15-EET

Alllyic oxidation

5-HETE
8-HETE
9-HETE
11-HETE
12-HETE
15-HETE

Omega oxidation

19-HETE (Omega-1)
20-HETE (Omega)
Figure 14

Figure 15
Figure 18

Figure 19
Figure 23

Figure 24
Figure 25

Figure 26

Figure 27
Figure 31

Figure 32
Figure 35

Figure 36
Figure 37
Figure 38
Figure 39
Figure 42

Figure 43

CD40L
Pulsing
Epitope transfection
Tissue (bystander) apoptosis
Barratt-Boyes 2000 experimental configuration

Figure 44

Figure 45
Figure 46
Figure 47

Figure 48
Figure 51